



# His Scent Made Me Love Him S1

*thank you for coming into my life*

**NOBUHLE NDIMANDE**

***HIS SCENT MADE ME***

***LOVE HIM S1***

***By Nobuhle Ndimande***

*This story is written by Nobuhle  
Ndimande.*

*This is the first story about Simyolisiwe Nxubo who her life changed after she had her first child Mandisa. Her family had abandoned her but her best friend and her family took her in as their second daughter. Her life changes completely when she meets up with Siyavuya Mcunu. She has to act being in a relationship with Siyavuya for a month then having for them to fall in love a month later. Things start changing when Mandisa gets raped. Simyolisiwe somehow becomes overprotective when it comes to her daughter. And when she gets pregnant things start changing for*

*her and Siyavuya. A lot is going to happen in this story.*

*I hope y'all enjoy my S1 and S2 will be more amazing to be considerably. And they're lot of books I would recommend for you all.*

*Thank you :)*

## PROLOGUE

I was busy at my office when my personal assistant walked inside with files that I told her to work on. She placed them on my table. I sighed knowing very well that I'm going to stay here until late.

Me: thank you, you can go

Ashley: you sure you won't need anything?

Me: yes go

Ashley: I'll see you tomorrow then

I smiled as she walked out. I continued working until 20h00. I got done after few minutes. I quickly tied up my table then I took my coat, laptop bag, my bag and my phone then I made my way out. I saw Thapelo cleaning up the passage to the

other offices. I walked to him. He looked at me wiping his hands.

Thapelo: are you okay?

Me: yes why are you working late?

Thapelo: I'm not an early person so working late works for me. I mean y'all be busy and the building would be quiet so yeah

I smiled looking at him.

Me: lemme go I'm so tired and hungry

Thapelo: I'll see you tomorrow

Me: okay bye

I walked out of the building then I got in my car. I drove straightaway to my house. I got there after some time. I found my daughter already asleep all thanks to my maid. I had something to eat while watching TV. My phone rang whilst doing so. I answered it.

Me: what can I do for you?

Precious: expect me tomorrow

Me: I'll be very busy tomorrow and please don't be hooking me up with those guys

She laughed.

Precious: I won't. I missed you and I want to spend my quality time with you

Me: tomorrow it is then. You will fetch me and notify me early please

Precious: I'll do that. How's my baby girl doing?

Me: she's doing perfectly amazing

Precious: tell her I love her tomorrow

Me: I'll do that bye

Precious: bye friend

I disconnected the phone after she said that. I finished eating up then I washed my plate. I walked upstairs to my room then I took off my clothes. I walked to the en-suite then I got in a shower. I washed my body whilst singing busy swaying my hips. I got startled when the shower door got opened. It was my daughter. I took a towel then I dried my body.

Me: are you okay?

Mandisa: can we sleep together?

Me: of course it's fine let me finish up. You may wait for me on the bed

She walked to the bed and got into it. I applied lotion on my body then I wore my night dress. I joined my daughter then we slept together.



Where are my manners I'm Simyolisiwe Nxubo and I have a daughter Mandisa 7 years old and this is my story.

## ONE

I was woken up by my daughter calling me. I sat up straight looking at her. She didn't look okay. I checked her forehead she was burning up. I quickly got off the bed and wore my robe with my sleepers.

Me: baby are you okay?

She shook her head. I sighed walking out with her on my room. We headed to her room. I made her wear warm clothes. She was burning up. I took my phone. It was 03h00 in the morning. I called Mandisa's father as we headed to the car.

Me: drink that in the meantime okay baby?

She nodded looking at me. Melusi was taking too long to answer. I disconnected the phone angrily then quickly drove off to

the hospital with tears streaming down my face. I can't lose my daughter no matter how she was conceived. I can't lose her. She's all I need. I'm not in a relationship with Melusi because he's married and has kids. Him and I met up at a club. He approached me with one of his friend. I didn't want anything to do with him. I don't know what happened but the following day I woke up at his house. He obviously told me that we had sex. I got furious at him and I stomped out of the house not wanting to hear anything from him anymore. So months later I was sick. I went to the doctor and to my surprise Melusi was there he didn't seem okay. I didn't mind him but I went to the doctor. He examined me and told me that I was months pregnant. I

couldn't believe it. He told me what is it that I should. I listened to him then I walked out. I slapped Melusi causing everyone to gaps in air. He pulled me out of the hospital and asked me what's wrong. I told him nothing but the truth. He also told me the truth. I couldn't believe that he was married and has kids. I got mad at hearing that. I told my parents and siblings that I was pregnant they chose to disown me. I couldn't believe it. Precious was the only person who was there for me even Melusi was there even though I didn't want anything to do with him. Despite how my daughter was conceived and not planned I still love her so much. I don't want absolutely anything to happen to my daughter. I got at the hospital after some

time. I carried my daughter because she was already asleep. I called out the nurse. She quickly took my daughter away. I filled some forms then I waited for the doctor to come out. Melusi decided to call me. I answered the phone sniffing.

Melusi: what's wrong?

Me: Mandisa was admitted

Melusi: what's wrong with her?

Me: she woke me up not so long ago and I checked her she was burning so I took her to the hospital now I'm waiting for the doctor to tell me what's wrong with her

Melusi: I'm coming

He disconnected the phone after saying that. I buried my head on my hands with tears streaming down my face. I just hope

my daughter gets better. This actually means that I won't go to work today I have to take care of my daughter. Melusi won't even want to leave until he sees that Mandisa is better. I felt someone touching me. I quickly wiped my tears then looked who it was. It was Melusi. He embraced me in his arms.

Melusi: don't worry she's going to be okay  
I sighed.

Me: why didn't you pick up my call earlier?

Melusi: I was busy

Like I believe it. He really thinks that I'm a fool and I'm not. We waited over for an hour until when a doctor came out of the ward. He looked over at us. I quickly stood up and looked at him.

Doctor: are you both Mandisa's parents?

Us: yes

Me: is my daughter okay?

Doctor: yes she is better now you don't have to be worried. I'll give you pills that she should take and she must have enough rest so I suggest that she doesn't go to school today but Monday okay?

I nodded.

Me: nothing major was wrong with her?

Doctor: she had a headache and fatigue

Me: is she going home today?

Doctor: we're done with her

Me: can you take her pills in the meantime?

Melusi nodded walking away with the doctor. I got inside the ward. My daughter

was sleeping peacefully. I kissed her forehead holding her hand. She started moving. She looked at me smiling faintly.

Me: let's go home baby

I carried her. She held me tightly. I walked out of the ward. I walked out of the hospital. I put Mandisa nicely on the backseat. She was already asleep. Melusi appeared. He gave me the pills.

Me: thank you

Melusi: I'll come at 10h00

Me: okay

He kissed my forehead then walked to his car. I got in my car then drove back to my house with music playing. I was revealed that my daughter was doing absolutely okay. I got at my house after some time. I



carried my daughter inside. I put her nicely on the bed. I slept next to her.

•

I was busy making something to eat for my daughter and I when a knock came through my door. I sighed wiping my hands. I headed to the door. I oppressively opened the door. I sighed heading to the kitchen as Melusi let himself inside. He heads to the lounge. I followed him. I sat next to my daughter. Melusi hugs her. I shook my head as he feeds her.

Me: you know that she has hands

Melusi: kill me for being the best father

Me: whatever Melusi

He chuckled. My phone rang. It was my personal assistant. I answered the phone.

Me: what is it?

Ashley: there's a man who wants to see you

Me: I told you that I'm not coming to work today so what does that person want?

Ashley: he didn't say anything but I gave him your numbers

Me: okay

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I sighed.

Melusi: are you okay?

I nodded smiling.

Me: I hope you told your precious wife where you are

Melusi: I did

Me: that's better

My phone rang. It was an unknown number and I assumed it was the person that wanted to see me. I answered the phone.

Voice: hello

A manly voice greeted me.

Me: hey

Him: well I guess that you've been told you will get my phone call. I'm Advocate Khoza

Me: what can I do for you?

Advocate Khoza: it's your parents

I sighed as tears threatened to come out.

Me: what do they want after so many years?

Advocate Khoza: they want to speak to you

Me: I can't seem to bring myself to do that. I'm sorry

I disconnected the phone after saying that. Tears streamed down my face uncontrollably. I walked to the kitchen. I went on my knees holding my mouth preventing myself from sobbing loudly. Why now? Why do they want to talk to me now after so many years? I needed them but they chose to disown me. They chose to kick me out of my own home. I just don't understand why. I felt someone holding me. I cried loudly in Melusi's arms. I couldn't say anything. I just couldn't bring myself to do it at all.

## TWO

While making dinner with Melusi his phone rang and I knew it was his wife. I sighed knowing very well that he has to go because that's going to be that case. He answered the phone walking away. I switched off the stove on the rice then I continued making the stew. Melusi came back. He chopped his cabbage. I shook my head smiling. The door bell rang. I sighed wiping my hands. I headed to the door. I opened up. My best friend attacked me with a hug. I giggled hugging her back. She had her suitcase and she wasn't alone. She brought company.

Precious: this is Siyanda my boyfriend

She acts like I don't know him. And I do.

Me: hey Siyanda

Precious: good bye and thank you

Siyanda: my pleasure. We'll talk later on okay?

Precious: yes

She gave him a peck then he walked away. We got inside. She rolled her suitcase to her room. I walked back to the kitchen.

Precious: what's wrong with my baby?

She shouted from the lounge.

Me: she's sick as you can see for yourself

Melusi chuckled.

Me: who was that?

Melusi: no one you should worry about

Me: you should stop what you're doing

Melusi: I'm not doing anything though

Me: ohh please you can't lie to me

Melusi: I'm not check my phone

Me: no I won't do that

Melusi: please do

Me: dude no

He took his phone then gave it to me. I sat on the kitchen counter then I went through his phone because he wanted me to do that. He wasn't doing anything nasty. I just couldn't believe it. He was just clean. He only had contacts of people he works with not to mention people he knows and close with. I was impressed. I gave him back his phone. He chuckled taking it. I switched off the stove then I headed to the lounge. I sat next to Precious.

Precious: who's here? Because I know you're not in a relationship

Me: Melusi is here

Precious: what is he doing here?

Me: his daughter is sick that's why he's here

Precious: he's sleeping here?

Me: I don't know

Precious: does his wife know?

Me: yes she does

Precious: I don't want her to kill you

Me: she won't

Precious: you never know

I shook my head laying my head on her shoulder.

Me: he's handsome by the way

Precious: thank you. I wanted to sleep at his house but then I remembered that I had to come by since you knew that I was coming



Me: you could have called me

Precious: next time I will do that

Me: please, I don't want you saying I snatched away your dick

Precious: okay we have a kid in here

We both laughed. Melusi appeared with plates in his hands. He gave us our plate.

We thanked him as he went to his plate. We were already indulging in our food.

Me: so I got call from my parent's lawyer

Precious: are you serious?

I nodded.

Precious: Why now? After so many years

Me: that was my question. Why now vele. I just don't understand. I mean it has been 7 years and now they want to talk to me

Precious: it might be important

Me: I don't care. I had to suffer without them when I needed them the most. I don't want to see them

Melusi: you have to see them. Our daughter needs to know their grandparents

Me: they chose to disown me when I was pregnant with her. What makes you think that they're going to accept her just like that?

Melusi: just hear them out just for once

Me: I won't be able to bring myself to do it

They sighed looking at me. We ate in complete silent. I went upstairs when I finished up my food. I had already kissed my baby just to say good night. I got in my room. I sighed throwing myself in the bed.

Melusi got in the room. He sat next to me. He kissed my forehead then made me lay on his shoulder.

Melusi: talk to them please

Me: it's hard

Melusi: I know but please do it for our baby  
I sighed.

Me: okay I'll see

He chuckled. I rolled my eyes looking at him. He gave me a peck. I shook my head.

Me: don't ever do that again. You seem to forget Precious is here and she's going to kill you if she hears what is it that you did

Melusi: I know just that I missed you so much

Me: I know. You'll sleep here and I'll sleep with Mandisa

Melusi: okay

He held my face. We shared a passionate kiss with him squeezing my thigh. I moaned softly getting myself away from him. He chuckled as I walked away. I smiled going to my daughter's room. She was already asleep. I tucked myself and slept next to her.

•

Precious: I'm not coming back

Me: I'll see you tomorrow then

Precious: bye baby

Mandisa: bye aunt

They shared a hug. I hugged my best friend then she walked out. Melusi came

downstairs with his boxer briefs. I shook my head heading to the kitchen. I made muesli with white plain yoghurt. I was craving for that. I sat on the kitchen counter then had it. Melusi made himself breakfast.

Melusi: did my daughter eat?

Me: really?

Melusi: I'm concerned. Did my daughter eat?

Me: Precious made her breakfast

Melusi: how did you sleep?

Me: I slept good thank you. When are you leaving?

Melusi: you can just tell me straight to my face that you don't want to see me

Me: I see you want your wife to come here and cause drama

Melusi: she won't cause drama. She knows I'm with you and our daughter no one else. If she needs something she's going to call me and tell me what's wrong other than that I'll leave when I want to

I sighed looking at him. He shrugged his shoulders taking a bite on his bacon. He came in between my thighs. I shook my head rolling my eyes.

Melusi: you look beautiful

Me: okay Mandisa's father

He chuckled kissing my neck.

Me: no don't do that

Melusi: please

Me: no this is the reason I want you to leave because you always find a way to annoy me

He didn't listen to me. He kissed my neck bringing me closer to him. Melusi looked at me. I just shook my head as he gave me a peck.

Me: don't make this more complicated please

Melusi: okay but...

I interrupted him.

Me: whatever that you wanna say no. I told you for years we won't do anything. I'm okay with us being cosy doing all that but you won't touch me. I'm serious Melusi you won't. You're married for goodness sake. I don't want your wife to hate me because of you please Melusi. I'm not single because of you. I'm single because I want to be single. If I want I can get a partner, I will get one

because I'm a beautiful mother not to mention that I'm sexy

Melusi: Indeed you are

I shook my head smiling.

Me: don't mess this up because if you do we won't continue to do this any further

Melusi: okay mam

Me: thank you for listening to me

Melusi: can I have a kiss?

Me: you know that if our daughter sees us she will tell your wife so no

Melusi: just a peck

Me: why did I meet you and gave you a child? Because wow you're such a nuisance

He chuckled.

Melusi: I'm sorry



I rolled my eyes. I gave him a peck. He smiled looking at me. My phone rang. I quickly took it. It was Ashley. I sighed answering the phone.

Me: what's wrong?

Ashley: there's someone we don't know that wants to see you

Me: does that person wants to see me now or I should meet up with that person somewhere?

Ashley: I'll send you a location he's at but then in the meantime go take a shower

Me: okay lemme do that. I just hope this person won't irritate me

Ashley: I won't say anything

I chuckled.

Ashley: just go

Me: okay boss I'm going jeez

She laughed. I giggled disconnecting the phone. I looked at Melusi.

Me: can you please stay with her I have to be somewhere I'll just take few minutes

Melusi: well I'm taking my daughter out

Me: that's better than nothing thank you so much daddy you're the best

I gave him a peck then I got off the counter. I quickly ran upstairs. I took off my dress then I headed to the en-suite. I quickly took a shower then I did the necessity. I wore my black dress that tightened me. My cleavage was even out. I also wore my crop topped denim with white stilettos. I looked beautiful. I took my stuff then I walked downstairs. I gave my daughter a peck then

I drove off the house. The location was already sent. I drove to that location. I got there after some time. I made my way there with my belongings. I honestly didn't know who I was meeting up with. I took my sit then I ordered red wine for myself busy on my laptop. A SCENT MADE ME close my eyes. I inhaled in it. A smile formed on my face. This person smelled so amazing. I just loved how that person smelled onto me. I was disturbed by someone snapping his fingers on my face. I quickly composed myself. I looked up and I saw a handsome guy. He really looked good. I quickly stood up. We shared a hand shake then took our sit.

Him: I honestly thought you weren't going to come

Me: well here I am

Him: I see

Me: why am I here?

Him: first of all you don't know me and yet you're asking why you're here? Wow  
Simyolisiwe

Me: I don't even know you but you called me by my full name really? Don't ever do that again. We don't share anything common for you to call me by my name. You're not my boyfriend and you won't be my boyfriend, we don't have a child together nor are we friends. Don't ever again call me by my name

Him: okay no need for you to be this way

Me: whatever

He chuckled.

Me: why am I here?

He spoke. I listened to him busy taking few notes there and there. I even ordered something to eat because he was taking too long. He took his precious time. After some time he got done. I was relieved. I packed up my belongings then I paid the bill.

Him: I'm Siyavuya Mcunu by the way

Me: okay nice to know you

Siyavuya: I'll see you around

Me: if it happens okay?

He chuckled. I shook my head making my way to the car. I put everything on the backseat then I drove straight to my house listening to music. I will be alone at my house. I mean Melusi took our daughter out.

## THREE

My phone rang as I got at the house. I took my belongings then I looked at the caller ID. It was my brother. I sighed thinking whether I should answer his phone call or not. I thought about what Melusi said to me. I sat on the couch then answered my phone.

Siyanda: mtase

Me: what can I do for you?

I heard him sigh.

Siyanda: ndfuna sithethile

- I want us to talk

Me: senza ntoni ngoku?

- What are we doing now?

Siyanda: mom and dad want to speak with you

Me: for what? Why now?

Siyanda: they missed their daughter

Me: ohh please that's bullshit. I'm not falling for that. How the hell am I missed when I'm 23 and have it all? Y'all chose to disown me when I was 18. Just 18 then 7 years later I get called why? Why?

I wiped my tears. Melusi got inside with a happy Mandisa. She ran to me and gave me a tight hug. I smiled giving her a peck. She giggled looking at me.

Mandisa: look what dad bought me. He bought me a cotton candy

Me: she's not supposed to eat sweets

Melusi: I'm sorry

I rolled my eyes. He chuckled sitting next to me.

Melusi: go to your room

Mandisa: okay

Mandisa ran upstairs. Melusi looked at me.

Melusi: what's wrong?

I gave him my phone. He walked away with it. I covered myself with a fleece then I closed my eyes. I just wanted to rest a little bit.

- 
- 
- 

FEW DAYS LATER...

Melusi: do you want me to leave?

I shook my head. He chuckled coming to me. He hugged me.



Melusi: when you need me or when our daughter needs me don't forget to call me  
I nodded looking at him.

Melusi: you're so cute when you're sulking

Me: fuck you

Melusi: I would gladly love to do that now

Me: it happened once and it won't happen again

Melusi: if you say so

He spanked my ass. I looked at him squinting my eyes.

Me: okay now leave

He chuckled. He gave me a peck then headed out. I walked to the kitchen. I made a green salad for both me and my daughter. The door bell rang.

Me: Mandisa!

Mandisa: but you're closer!

She shouted from the lounge.

Me: don't you dare

She laughed going to answer the door. I poured orange juice for the both of us. I took our salad at the lounge with the juices. Mandisa came and sat next to me.

Me: who was that?

Mandisa: andbazi but naba

- I don't know them but here there are

Me: make sure you finish this otherwise I'll have to call your father to come back

Mandisa: wow mom

We both laughed. I looked up and I saw my parents with my siblings. I chuckled focusing my eyes on the TV.

Me: take a sit no one stands in my house

They took their sit. I sighed as Precious screamed singing Isley Brothers – Busted. I shook my head smiling.

Mandisa: Yanxola auntie

- You're making noise auntie

Precious: just say you've missed me because I did baby

Mandisa: ohh please really?

Precious: yes really. Where's your annoying father?

Mandisa: he left not so long ago

Precious: I see the wife is tired of him being here

Me: very tired I can assure you that

Precious sat next to me. She realized after some time that we had guests.

Precious: I'm so sorry I didn't see you guys.  
Good morning

Them: good morning

Dad: it's fine we understand

Mom: can you please introduce us

I sighed rolling my eyes.

Me: these are the people I thought were my parents not to mention siblings

Precious: the ones that chose to disown you 7 years ago? I understand. I'm her best friend who has been there for her since she

got pregnant. I'm Precious, Mandisa's auntie

Them: nice to know you

Precious faked a smile. I shook my head.

Me: baby remember what I told you before you got sick especially about what my parents did to me?

She nodded.

Me: these are your grandparents not to mention uncles and aunties

Mandisa: really?

She asked excitedly.

Precious: she will obviously get excited because she doesn't know what happened

Me: don't ruin it please

She sighed looking at me.

Me: how did you find me? I mean no one knows where I stay besides Mandisa's father and Precious so how do y'all know?

Siyanda: we hired someone to look at you

Me: wow just great. Can you guys give us space?

Precious walked away with my daughter upstairs. I drank my juice then looked at my family. It sure has been years I haven't seen them.

Mom: look baby we're sorry for what we did to you years ago. Just that we were so mad that you got pregnant at a young age not to mention that you not only had sex with a married man. I never taught you that. I was just afraid of the worst

Me: yes it is fine you guys were supposed to be mad at me but you guys shouldn't have kicked me out at my own home at the age of 18. I didn't have anything for years. I suffered having to go through this pregnancy. Yes Mandisa's father was there for me but he had his own life. He is married and has kids. I had to make a plan for me to be the way I am today. I'm glad that I'm actually this way. I'm glad I didn't have rely to my so called "family" for anything at all. I didn't know anything about raising a child you were supposed to be there for me. You were supposed to be there to guide me on what is it that I should do and shouldn't do. I know I made mistakes but what you guys did was totally wrong. What's worse is that why are y'all

here after so many years. Why now? I just don't understand. This is really confusing me

Dad: we know that you're mad at us but can we please do what we couldn't do years ago  
I sighed standing up.

Me: I don't know about that. I really don't know. Let me just put it in a way you guys would understand it. I got used to not having my family by my side especially at times when I needed them the most. I'm just fine mna. I don't know but I can have my daughter seeing you guys after all she's going to need you guys more than I do

Sanelisiwe: Please Simyolisiwe



Me: don't make me do something I'll regret  
not to mention saying so please don't push  
the wrong fucking buttons

My phone rang. It was Ashley. I answered  
the phone sitting down. It was on loud  
speaker.

Me: I told you to not call me. I'm not at  
work for a specific reason

Ashley: I tried talking to this person but he  
just kept on saying I should call you

Me: fuck him. Who is he?

Ashley: the same guy from last week

Me: we met up though. Tell him I can't and  
make a plan he leaves my building

Ashley: but mam...

I interrupted her.

Me: no buts Ashley. You're my personal assistant for a reason. You fix that. I will only come back tomorrow you know that

Ashley: why though?

I chuckled.

Me: I just want him out of my building. If he wants to see me he will call me. He has my numbers

Ashley: okay mam. How's your daughter doing?

Me: she's doing good. Tomorrow I'm coming with her. She doesn't have school since you know the situation

Ashley: I can't wait to see her

I shook my head smiling. Ashley loves my daughter like her own.

Me: you know what to do right?

Ashley: yes mam. Have a nice day

Me: same applies

I disconnected the phone after saying. My phone rang again. I answered the phone without checking the caller ID.

Me: what did you forget now?

Melusi: it's me dude

Me: what's wrong?

Melusi: well my wife invited you, our daughter and Precious over for a dinner tonight

Me: I'm sorry but we won't be able to come. I see you want her to kill me because of you overstaying here in my house

Melusi: my daughter was sick you seem to forget

Me: how would I forget that daddy?

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Melusi: please come

Me: no can't do probably next time. You know that tomorrow I'm going back to work. I'm sorry but we won't be able to come just apologise to your wife for me please

Melusi: please

Me: voetsek Melusi

He laughed. Mandisa ran down the stairs excited. She knelt in front of me. I knew Melusi had a hand in this. Precious also came downstairs. She also knelt in front of me.

Me: what?

Mandisa: please

Me: Melusi what did you say to them?

Melusi: they want to come but I know you don't

Me: Mandisa's father I'm going to work tomorrow so no fucking ways. Andizi uxolo

- I'm not coming sorry

Melusi: ufuna ntoni?

- What do you want?

Me: nothing you know you won't do anything

Melusi: I can...

I interrupted me.

Me: you're on the speaker by the way so don't say bullshit because you will be killed

Melusi: who will kill me?

Me: let me just say "my family" ohh God

Melusi: are you serious? They're there?

Me: yes they came after you left

Melusi: how do they know where you live?

Me: I don't know and I don't care

Melusi: thank you

Me: please don't you know how I still feel

I heard him sigh.

Melusi: I know but just do what is right that's all. After all our daughter has finally met up with her grandparents and obviously uncles and aunties

I chuckled.

Me: yes she did

Melusi: we'll talk then

Me: okay Mandisa say bye to your dad

Mandisa: bye daddy

Melusi: bye baby I will see you tomorrow

Mandisa: I'm going to work with mom

Melusi: Simyo...

I disconnected the phone quickly laughing. I looked at my daughter. She raised her hands in surrender. I shook my head smiling.

Me: do you guys want something to drink?

They nodded. I stood up and turned to them.

Me: ohh and another thing I forgive you guys

I headed to the kitchen after saying that. I poured orange juice for everyone. I offered them some of my baked chocolate scones. I gave it to them. They had them.

Siyanda: wow these scones are so delicious

Me: thank you

They all looked at me surprised. I shook my head.

Me: what?

Mom: you baked these?

Me: yes I did

Dad: the last time I remember you didn't like baking

Me: well things changed by the way. I only bake because of the three people that has been in my life actually four including my personal assistant

Sanelisiwe: can I maybe have twenty of the scones?

Me: talk to the two of them

Mom: please



Precious: it's fine let me pack them up for you guys

She headed to the kitchen.

Sanelisiwe: your daughter is beautiful by the way

Me: you heard her

Mandisa: enkosi umhle nawe

- Thank you. You're also beautiful

Sanelisiwe: thank you baby

My daughter giggled. Precious came back with a bucket of scones then gave it to them.

Precious: I forgot that Simyolisiwe doesn't use any of her tupperware so here is the bucket. You'll guys share

They nodded smiling. We talked about random things. Unfortunately my father is sick. He has cancer and he has little time to live that's why they looked out for me. The thoughts of hearing such news. It just triggered me. I honestly still need my father. I offered to help him. I want to take him to the best doctor. I just can't lose him now just as I found him. It is just wrong and unacceptable. Something has to be done.

## FOUR

Mandisa: mama tata funa uthetha nawe?

- Mom, dad wants to speak with you

Me: mxelele ndbusy

- Tell him I'm busy

Mandisa: okay uzondfumana kuPA yakho  
mama

-you will find me at your PA's office mom

Me: okay baby

She walked out with my phone after I spoke. I continued typing and sending my email to one of my important clients.

Someone barged in my office. I sighed shaking my head not wanting to say something really bad and awkward. The SCENT got in my nostrils again. I quickly opened my eyes only to see Siyavuya. He

looked at me smiling. I shook my head offering him a sit. He sat opposite me. I couldn't smell the SCENT anymore. I didn't understand why. I guess it was someone else who passed my office but we will never know.

Siyavuya: you look beautiful

Me: thank you. What can I do for you today? I didn't expect you

He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: I need a favour

Me: sure shoot ithini?

- Sure shoot what is it?

Siyavuya: bekfanele ndhambe nomama on this other function ngoku she won't be able to come because she's sick and now ndfuna

uhambe nami. Not unless kukho inxaki I'll ask someone else

- I was supposed to be going with my mother on this other function now she won't be able to come because she's sick and now I want you to come with me. Not unless there's a problem I'll ask someone else

Me: I'll talk with my daughter's father and ask him if he could stay with my daughter. If he agrees we can go. I don't mind actually

Siyavuya: you have a daughter?

Me: yes I do

Siyavuya: wow I didn't know

I chuckled.

Siyavuya: how old is she?

Me: she's 7 years old

Siyavuya: wow she has grown

Me: yes she has. When is this function?

Siyavuya: tomorrow

I chuckled shaking my head.

Me: okay it's fine. Do you need anything else?

Siyavuya: I wanna take you out

Me: no thank you. I rather stay with my daughter

Siyavuya: don't say I didn't tell you from three months until this day I will come back and ask you to go out with me

Me: I will see by you

He smiled standing up. He stopped his traces then looked at me.

Siyavuya: did you look through the papers?

Me: yes and we're good to go. You just need to do what you're best at then I'll do the rest

Siyavuya: okay enkosi ukuvuma for lanto

- Thank you for agreeing to this

Me: if I didn't like any of it I wasn't going to agree trust me but it was worth it having to go through it

Siyavuya: let me not ke...

Mandisa made her way inside interrupting Siyavuya.

Mandisa: mom ndlambile

- Mom I'm hungry

I looked at her raising my eyebrow. She looked at Siyavuya.

Mandisa: molo muntu omhle

- Good morning handsome person

Me: aybo Mandisa

Siyavuya laughed. I shook my head in disbelief looking at Mandisa. She pouted her lips looking at me.

Mandisa: I greeted him though

Me: okay

I said that defeated. Bendi ngayazi ndthini. Undohlulile lo mtana yazi. (I didn't know what to say. This child defeated me.)

Siyavuya: hello baby unjani?

- Hello baby how are you?

Mandisa: ndphile. Udyola nomama?

- I'm good. Are you dating mom?

Me: really Mandisa?



Mandisa: I'm just asking. And andboni ukba unenxaki yophendula umbuzo wami

- I'm just asking. And I don't see that he has a problem in answering my question

I shook my head chuckling.

Siyavuya: I'm not dating your mother.

We're working together that's all

Mandisa: xawutsho

- If you say so

Siyavuya smiled looking at my daughter then back at me.

Siyavuya: we will talk

Me: okay bye

He walked out after I said that. I got off my sit.

Me: are you really going to ask anyone you see in my office if whether they're with me?

Mandisa: ewe, you need a man in your life

- Yes

Me: ohh please you can't tell me that.

You're seven Mandisa I won't discuss this with you

Mandisa: daddy is in a relationship though

Me: he's married

Mandisa: yafana but ke mna ndfuna ujabule mna

- It's the same but I want you to be happy

Me: you don't have to be worried about me I'm good baby. I'm happy with you, your auntie and obviously having to see your father loving you everyday

Mandisa: okay

Me: what do you want to have?

Mandisa: ndfuna ipizza ne drink ebandayo

- I want pizza and a cold drink

Me: okay go and tell Ashley that

Mandisa: okay wena?

- Okay and you?

Me: I'm fine baby

Mandisa: okay

She ran out after saying that. I sighed heading to the bathroom. I did my business then I washed my hands. I headed back in my office and I found Thapelo packing up my table. I cleared my throat. He stopped what he was doing and looked at me.

Thapelo: I'm so sorry. I thought you were out that's why I thought of cleaning up here

Me: no it's fine you can continue. I'm actually done with everything

Thapelo: okay. You look beautiful by the way

Me: thank you so much. Let me leave to be then

Thapelo: yes mam

I chuckled walking out. I headed to Ashley's office. She was busy talking to my daughter busy doing her typing.

Me: take a break

Ashley: I'm almost done

I sat next to Mandisa. My phone rang. It was Melusi. I answered the phone wondering what is it that he needs.

Me: what is it?

Melusi: where are you?

Me: you know where I am

Melusi: I know but you're not at your office

Me: what are you doing here?

Melusi: I brought you lunch with my daughter

Me: I already ordered though

Ashley: actually I didn't mam. As you can see I was typing here

Me: okay come at my personal assistant's office

Melusi: okay.

He disconnected the phone after saying that. Minutes later he walked inside with a box of pizza and cold drinks for us. I

thanked him as he handed us what he had.  
He kissed my cheek then sat next to me.

Melusi: you're so beautiful

Me: thank you

Melusi: hello baby

Mandisa: hey daddy

Melusi: you're good?

Mandisa: I'm good. Yesterday I met my  
grandparents not to mention my other  
uncle and aunt

Melusi: really? That's amazing. Do you love  
them?

Mandisa: yes I do daddy

Me: I need favour

Melusi: what is it?

Me: I want Mandisa to sleep at your house tomorrow. I'm going to this function with a client that has invited me today

Melusi: when is the function?

Me: tomorrow

Melusi: and you're telling me now?

Me: you know very I would have told you immediately when I was told but no I was told few minutes ago

Melusi: I'm sorry

Me: it's fine. So are you going to fetch her before I leave?

Melusi: yes I will

Me: thank you so much

Melusi: it's nothing

I smiled looking at him. I had a piece of the pizza.

- 

I got out of the shower. I dry up my body then I brushed my teeth. I headed to my room. I applied lotion on my body then I wore the dress I took out early with my heels and some accessories. I looked appealing. I don't want to lie. One wouldn't say I'm a mother to a 7 year old not to mention that I'm 23 years old. I headed downstairs after getting done with everything. I found Mandisa eating her fruit salad. She looked at me smiling.

Mandisa: you look beautiful mommy

Me: thank you baby. Are you ready to go sleep at daddy's place?



She nodded smiling excitedly. A knock came on the door.

Me: it must be your father go open the door

She quickly ran to the door. I had long told Siyavuya about me coming since Melusi agreed. I also sent him my location so he can get me. I wasn't going to drive myself to wherever. Mandisa came with her father. I shook my head smiling.

Melusi: you look statuesque

Me: thank you

I gave him Mandisa's bag. He took it.

Me: I'll see you soon baby okay?

She nodded.

Me: please take care of my daughter

Melusi: I will don't worry

Mandisa: let's go daddy I wanna see my siblings already

I chuckled looking at her.

Melusi: okay let's go. Take care please

Me: I will don't worry about me

He gave me a peck on my cheek then he headed out with my daughter. I took my belongings then I had a glass of wine. A knock interrupted me. I walked to the door with my belongings. I opened the door and there stood Siyavuya looking handsome and smelling ravishing. HIS SCENT was the same one I had smelt earlier before I met him. He looked at me smiling astonished.

Siyavuya: wow you look absolutely beautiful

Me: thank you so much. You look bad yourself either

Siyavuya: one wouldn't say you're a mother

Me: let it be that way

We both laughed. He held my hand.

Me: lead the way

I locked my house then I headed out with Siyavuya. He was such a gentleman. He opened the door for me then he went to his side. He started driving off with music playing.

Siyavuya: I'm sorry but I have to be honest with you

Me: what is it?

I asked looking at him.

Siyavuya: my mom has hosted something so I sort of needed a partner to go with me.

My mom wasn't going to be pleased if I came alone so I thought of you. I'm sorry I

lied to you. Just that I thought if I became honest with you, you were not going to go out with me

Me: it's fine

He quickly looked at me surprised. I chuckled shaking my head.

Me: dude it's fine. Why did you come to me though?

Siyavuya: you're the definition my mom wants me to have as a significant other

Me: ohh wow that's beautiful

Siyavuya: you're beautiful

I giggled.

Me: thank you. If you're going to introduce me to your mother how are you going to introduce me?

Siyavuya: actually my partner

Me: no what the fuck? You can't do that.

We're not dating though. I don't even know you that well for you to introduce me to your mother as your partner. Are you crazy?

I smacked his head. He whined brushing his head.

Siyavuya: I'm sorry but mom thinks I'm coming with my partner

Me: why ain't she here?

Siyavuya: that's because I'm not in a relationship

Me: ohh really?

Siyavuya: yes I'm not. Look I want you to act as my girlfriend for a month please

Me: a month? Awunyi perhaps?

He chuckled. I smacked his head again.

Siyavuya: okay stop that jeez

Me: I hate you right now for putting me in this situation. Look tell me what is it that I should do because wow I didn't sign up for this

Siyavuya: I can give you...

I interrupted him.

Me: I don't fucking need your money

Siyavuya: okay

Me: you know that your mother is going to ask us some questions so you have tell me how the hell we met, where, how and when. When did we make things official? How old am I? And fuck yes how old are you too? I need to know that. How long have we been together? Have I introduced you to

my parents? Do you take fatherly role to my baby? When did we start getting intimate sexually? So tell me how are we gonna do this

Siyavuya: I never thought it that way but you're being honest

Me: tell me while you're driving. I'll catch up with everything really fast

He nodded. He started telling me. I shook my head in disapproving in some other things. I had to add to the information. After some time we were able to wrap things up. We got at this huge mansion. It looked so beautiful. I loved it already. I feel like I have been here before. Siyavuya opened the door for me then we headed inside hand in hand. I mean we're dating. Before we could get inside I stopped

Siyavuya. He looked at me raising his eyebrow in a sexy way. I shook my head smiling looking at him.

Siyavuya: what is it?

Me: do you know how to kiss?

Siyavuya: what kind of a question is that? Of course I can

Me: show me because it's going to be important in here

Siyavuya: we'll see from the...

I didn't let him finish. I pulled him then smashed my lips on his strawberry lips. We shared a passionate kiss and he sure was a good kisser. He had his hands on my waist. I pulled out as I was about to release a moan feeling some type of way. Siyavuya looked at me smirking as he let go of me.



Siyavuya: you're...

I interrupted him.

Me: save it let's get inside

He chuckled holding my hand. We headed inside and it was full. The house looked ravishing. I couldn't believe my eyes.

Everyone looked beautiful. A beautiful lady made her way to us. She almost looked like Siyavuya. I guess that's his mother but she looks young for her age.

Her: I'm glad you came baby

Siyavuya: wow mom really? In front of her?

Her: ohh please you're my baby boy

Siyavuya: okay mom this is my...

I interrupted him.

Me: I'm Simyolisiwe your son's girlfriend

Her: it's finally nice having to see you. I thought my son wasn't seeing anyone

Me: he likes keeping things secret

Her: I can see that but you look absolutely beautiful

Me: thank you so much and so do you

Her: ohh please it's nothing but then thank you. Let me introduce you to the others. I'm precisely sure they're going to be happy to see you

I looked at Siyavuya. He looked the other way.

Me: can I talk to him first? I'll join you shortly

Her: of course

She walked away after saying that. I pulled Siyavuya into a quiet place.

Me: really Siyavuya?

Siyavuya: I'm sorry

Me: ohh please really? That also means they're going to have to meet up my parents because I'm going to be introduced to the others. I don't even know them

Siyavuya: I'm sorry. I can make it up for you

Me: ohh please like I believe you

Siyavuya: trust me when I say that

I left him and went to his mother. She started introducing me to the others.

Everyone was so happy to see me. So for a whole month I'm going to act up for this?

Wow this is surely going to be harder than I thought.

## FIVE

I have to say the family is very big. I never thought I was going to be introduced to everyone in a short period of time. It was tiring having to share a little conversation with the elders. Everyone kept on complimenting me and it was so beautiful. Siyavuya was busy with his siblings talking about whatsoever. He was enjoying himself. He kept laughing engaging in a conversation with his siblings. He has two little sisters then a brother. He is a second born. I excused myself to a more quiet place because my phone was ringing. It was Melusi. I answered the phone leaning on the counter.

Me: yintoni?

- What is it

Melusi: kill me for being a caring person because I'm checking up on you

I chuckled.

Me: I'm sorry just that I'm so tired. You don't want to know what's happening in here. If I tell you, you're going to laugh because I got myself in this situation. I'm such a fool to agree to such

Melusi: what did you agree on?

Me: it's a long story. How's my baby?

Melusi: she's doing good obviously. She just went to sleep

Me: that's unlike her to sleep at this time

Melusi: you spoil her that's why

Me: fuck you

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Melusi: are you enjoying yourself there?

Me: yes I'm not complaining. If you're calling me where's your wife?

Melusi: she's taking a shower. I just thought of checking up on you before I sleep

Me: thank you so much. I appreciate it

Melusi: it's my pleasure. Let me leave you. I'll see you tomorrow

Me: good night

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I poured myself a glass of water then I gulped it down. Themba got in the kitchen. He is the first brother. He poured himself a whiskey then he looked at me as he took a sip of the drink. He looked tempting and intimidating. His aura just scares me.

Themba: why are you hiding here?

I chuckled looking at my hands.

Me: I'm not hid...

He interrupted me.

Themba: I know my family so you're basically hiding from them

Me: I wanted to run away from them. I have to say they're too much. I excused myself here because I got a phone call

Themba: okay

It went quiet for a second. I was even scared to start conversation.

Themba: so you're in a relationship with my brother

Me: sort of but yes

Themba: is it?

He asked raising his eyebrow looking at me.  
I nodded. He chuckled.

Themba: I won't be fooled but then if you  
say so

Me: where can I find a restroom?

Themba: just go upstairs and turn right you  
will find it

Me: thank you

I attempted to walk away but Themba  
touched my waist. I froze looking the other  
way. He started breathing on my neck.

Themba: you smell amazing

Me: Ummm... I... shit

I held my forehead as I stuttered.

Me: thank you



He let go off me. I made my way upstairs people were starting to leave. I went to where I was instructed to go. I did my business then I washed my hands. I wiped them. I looked at myself in the mirror and I saw Themba. I quickly turned to look at him. He came close to me then he carried me and placed me on the basin. He smashed his lips onto mine. We shared a passionate kiss with him being touchy. I moaned softly as he squeezed my ass. I heard my name being called out. I pulled out getting off the basin. I fixed myself then I headed out. I saw Siyavuya making his way to me. He looked at me smiling.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

I nodded vigorously.

Siyavuya: should I make you anything to eat before we go to sleep? My mom wants us to sleepover

Me: that's okay with me

Siyavuya: I will sleep on the couch

Me: are you sure?

Siyavuya: what do you mean I'm sure?

We're not in a relationship remember? I don't want to make you uncomfortable so you will sleep on the bed

Me: there's enough space for a reason but if you say so that's okay with me. Lead the way so I can get ready I'm tired

Siyavuya: yes mam

I giggled walking with him as he held my hand. We got into another room. He gave me an oversized t-shirt. I headed to the en-

suite. I took a quick shower then I wore the oversized t-shirt. It was usually short but I wasn't going to complain. I headed back to the room. I gave Siyavuya a blanket and a pillow then I got in the bed and slept.

•

My phone rang from the room. I quickly got out of shower and wrapped a towel around my body. I headed to the room. I sat on the bed. It was Precious. I answered the phone laying on the bed with my one leg up.

Precious: where the fuck are you?

Me: good morning Precious. How are you doing? I'm doing perfectly fine. Is that hard to do?

Precious: ohh please fuck you

I laughed and so did she.

Me: what's wrong?

Precious: where are you?

Me: it's a long story but I will tell you when I get to you after an hour. Should I come to your house or not?

Precious: come at my house because you made me come at your house for nothing  
I chuckled.

Me: okay let me get ready

Precious: you didn't sleep with anyone did you?

Me: oh my God no I wouldn't do that

Precious: okay let me not interrupt you

Me: okay bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I got off the bed then I applied lotion on my

body. I wore back my dress with heels then I did my hair. While doing my hair Themba got in the room. I sighed looking at him through the mirror. He came to me. Why is it that he likes me? I don't share any relationship with him whatsoever but he somehow likes me. I just don't know why. It's kind of straight. When we kissed yesterday I felt some type of way. I just don't understand why. I can't have any relationship with him. I mean I'm in a fake relationship with his brother but it has to look surreal. Themba sat on the bed. I did my hair then got done with it. I headed to the en-suite. I washed my hands then I headed back to the room. I bumped into Themba. I cursed holding my forehead.

Themba: I'm sorry

Me: what do you want from me? You don't know me. I'm in a relationship with your brother. Whatever that happened yesterday was a mistake that's not going to happen again

He chuckled. I shook my head walking away from him but he stopped me and pinned me against the wall looking at me.

Themba: I told you that you can't fool me. I know you're not in a relationship with my brother

Me: so what? That doesn't mean anything. I don't want anyone in my life. I'm perfectly fine with the way things are. I don't need you nor your brother

He chuckled.

Themba: really?

He said that walking his hand on my inside thigh. My breathing started changing. He squeezed my thigh. I closed my eyes. He smashed his lips against mine. I just froze.

Themba: you don't need us that's okay

He walked his hand inside my pussy. He rubbed my clit slowly. I moaned softly closing my legs. I pulled his hand out then I moved myself away from him. I fixed myself.

Me: I mean it. I don't want you

Themba: I want to believe you

Me: you have to believe me because it is true

I took my phone and headed out of the room. I headed downstairs everyone was there seated having breakfast. I greeted

everyone taking my sit. I dished up for myself then said a short prayer before indulging in my food. Themba came downstairs after some time. He took his sit. Siyavuya came close to me. He kissed my neck.

Siyavuya: he has a girlfriend just so you know

He said that whispering.

Me: what do you want me to do with that? I wasn't going to be in a relationship with him. Remember I'm in a relationship with you

He chuckled.

Siyavuya: I was just letting you know. I mean you smell like him even yesterday you



did. So probably you both did something I don't know of

Me: fuck you

He chuckled. I shook my head drinking my orange juice.

Siya's mom: how did you sleep?

Me: I slept good thank you

Siya's mom: thank you for coming over

Me: it's my pleasure

Siya's mom: I hope you enjoyed yourself yesterday

Me: I did

Siya's dad: I hope Siyavuya didn't trouble you yesterday

Me: he wasn't going to stand a chance

Everyone laughed. I shook my head smiling. We shared a slight conversation. It was amazing. When I was supposed to leave everyone was sad. I told them I was going to see them again. Siyavuya drove me to Precious's house. I told him where I was going. We got there after some time. He pulled over there. He had his doors locked. I looked at me expecting him to open up. He just folded his arms looking at me.

Me: what do you want?

Siyavuya: just a hug

I chuckled.

Me: come here

He smiled looking at me. He got close to me. We shared a tight hug. He then kissed my forehead.

Siyavuya: thank you

Me: you owe me though

Siyavuya: I know I do. I'm sorry for putting you in this position

Me: no feelings attached right?

Siyavuya: I mean a month has four weeks, like thirty days how would one not caught feelings but we will see from there

Me: I'm serious dude. I don't want to find myself in an awkward position

Siyavuya: it's fine but we should spend time together

Me: yeah right. You'll tell me when you have my number

Siyavuya: yes I do

Me: I'll see you possibly when you want to see me

Siyavuya: yes I will let you know

I got out of the car then I waved at him. He smiled as he drove off. I headed inside Precious house. I didn't even knock. She came running with a broom. I looked at her raising an eyebrow. She took a deep breath looking at me.

Precious: the fuck is wrong with you? I was going to actually beat the hell out of you

Me: I told you I was coming. What did you expect?

Precious: whatever. You look beautiful. You were with a guy right?

She said that smiling looking at me. She came close to me and smelled me. I smelled amazing though.

Precious: who the hell is he?

Me: my acting boyfriend

Precious: what do you mean your acting boyfriend?

I headed to the lounge with a glass of wine.

I took my sit then took a sip of my wine.

Precious laid her head on my thighs.

Precious: tell me already

Me: well the day before yesterday one of my client who goes by the name of Siyavuya came to my office. He wanted me to attend a function only to find out yesterday that he wanted me to be his partner because his mother wanted him to come with his

girlfriend but unfortunately he's not in a relationship. So he asked me if I could act as his girlfriend for a month. You know how I am. I didn't agree but ended up agreeing. So yes I have boyfriend

Precious: when am I gonna see him?

Me: when he wants to see me. I mean we have to make it obvious that we're dating because if not everyone will notice

Precious: who will?

Me: his entire family that I was introduced at. Like I couldn't believe it

Precious: you're in deep trouble

Me: tell me about it. I don't know why I got myself into this. Siyavuya's brother want me. I mean yesterday we kissed at

someone's room then again this morning.

He just caught me off guard

Precious: you did what?

Me: I didn't do anything. He came to me

Precious: but still you kissed him

Me: it was a mistake and it won't happen again. I mean Siyavuya told me that he's in a relationship

Precious: that is actually amazing. Just focus on the poor boy

Me: he's not a boy

Precious: does Melusi know?

Me: why would I tell him?

Precious: ohh yeah I get you. But then what happens if in this month of you guys acting

as a boyfriend and a girlfriend you guys caught feelings?

Me: no one is supposed to caught feelings

Precious: I know the game but what if?

That's the question

Me: I don't know. I really don't know

I drank the glass of wine then went in deep into my thoughts. This situation is really fucked up. I hope no one gets hurt in the end.



## SIX

ONE MONTH LATER...

Mandisa: look at you looking so beautiful

Me: ohh please. I'm just wearing a dress baby nothing more

Mandisa: you found a boyfriend?

Me: should I discuss that with you?

Mandisa: I mean yeah

Me: hell no I won't

She shook her head smiling.

Mandisa: where are you going?

Me: just so you know your father is coming to get you in few minutes

Mandisa: mom

Me: what?

I giggled. My phone rang. Mandisa handed it to me. I looked at the caller ID. It was Siyavuya. I shook my head answering the phone.

Me: don't tell me you're here already

Siyavuya: I just couldn't wait for you to call me. It's best Mandisa's father sees me then beat the shit out of me

Me: don't say that

Siyavuya: I'm serious. Should I come in?

Me: it's fine you can

Siyavuya: okay

I disconnected the phone after he said that. I looked at my daughter.

Me: go downstairs

Mandisa: okay

She headed out of my room. I applied lip gloss on my lips then I headed out of my room. I found Mandisa talking with Siyavuya. My daughter even offered Siyavuya a drink which is amazing.

Mandisa: your boyfriend is here

I chuckled. Siyavuya shook his head smiling.

Me: he's my friend baby

Mandisa: he also said that but I just find it hard to believe it

Me: get your bag please

Mandisa: okay

She headed upstairs leaving me with Siyavuya. He looked handsome as always and he smelled so amazing. I don't know but I just love how he smells. I sat next to him.

Me: you're good though?

Siyavuya: I'm doing good. You got home safe yesterday?

Me: as you can see I'm alive and well

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: you look statuesque baby girl

Me: thank you. And you don't look bad yourself

Siyavuya: I know I'm handsome and good looking Simyolisiwe

Me: ohh please fuck you

He laughed. I rolled my eyes looking at him.

Siyavuya: after all you're my girlfriend so I would gladly love to do it right here and right now

He said that coming closer to me. I looked at his lips. I shook my head as we made eye contact.

Siyavuya: you're really beautiful

Me: thank you again

He kissed my cheek. I suppressed a smile.

Siyavuya went back to his position.

Someone cleared a throat. That could only be Melusi. I stood up and walked up to him.

Me: Mandisa!

Mandisa: I'm coming!

She shouted from her room.

Me: hey Melusi

Melusi: who is he?

Me: a friend you shouldn't be worried about

Melusi: I don't want my daughter seeing different guys in here

Me: wow Melusi. You really think that I'm a whore? Wow

Melusi: your words not mine

Mandisa came downstairs with her bag. She hugged Siyavuya then came to me. She hugged me. I kissed her forehead.

Me: I will see you Monday okay?

Mandisa: I thought...

I interrupted her.

Me: I know baby. I just need some time alone

Mandisa: okay I will see you then and enjoy your day with your friend

Me: I will baby don't worry

She smiled looking at me.

Me: I love you okay?

Mandisa: I love you more

Melusi: let's go bye Siwe

I just nodded. I was just mad because of what he said. He headed out with Mandisa. I headed to the kitchen. I poured myself a glass of wine. I gulped it down then I sat on the kitchen counter. Siyavuya appeared. He looked at me concerned.

Siyavuya: okay what did he do or say to you?

I sighed looking at him. He sat on the bar stool. He held both of my hands.

Me: it's nothing serious you should worry about it

Siyavuya: well I want to know

Me: you're not going to let this go are you?

Siyavuya: no I won't

Me: well Melusi said that he doesn't want Mandisa to see different guys in here. Like he thinks that I'm a whore. I mean after all I never bought a man over at my house so I understand why he acted that way but at the same time he wasn't supposed to say that

Siyavuya: you're being honest. He shouldn't have. It wasn't his place. What I can tell you is that he loves you

I chuckled in disbelief.

Me: he's married. He can't be in love with me

Siyavuya: I'm just saying. I mean otherwise he wouldn't have said what he said to you



Me: I just find it hard to believe it

Siyavuya: obviously if you're going to ask him, he's going to deny it

Me: it doesn't matter because he's married. What I do with anyone shouldn't bother him at all

Siyavuya: exactly so don't worry about him  
I smiled looking at him.

Siyavuya: what do you wanna do?

Me: I don't know because I thought you had something in mind

Siyavuya: since we're home alone we can do whatever we want

Me: and what is it that?

Siyavuya: I don't know maybe this

He said the getting off his sit. He kissed my cheek.

Siyavuya: or this

He kissed my forehead.

Siyavuya: or actually this

He kissed both of my eyes. I giggled looking at him.

Siyavuya: or this

He kissed my other cheek. A smile formed my face.

Siyavuya: or this

He looked at me smiling then gave me a peck. He got close to me then touched my breast. I held his face then we shared a passionate kiss. Siyavuya squeezed my breast. I moaned softly on his lips. He walked his hand on my thighs. I froze.

Siyavuya broke off the kiss then looked at me touching both of my hands.

Siyavuya: I'm sorry I couldn't control myself. I just...

I smashed my lips on his. We shared a passionate kiss with him touching me. He carried me and headed to the lounge with the both of us kissing each other lustfully. He laid me nicely on the couch then took off his t-shirt. I bit my lower lip looking at him. He sure has a perfect body fit for modelling. Siyavuya took off my heels then he kissed my thighs. I moaned softly looking at him. He took my lace pantie off then he walked up to me rubbing my clit. I moaned softly as we shared a passionate kiss. I arched my back as Siyavuya finger fucked me.

Me: wait... Ohh God

He stopped then looked at me worried.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

Me: yeah just that it has been years you see

Siyavuya: you weren't touched after having Mandisa?

Me: yes so I'm just scared

He chuckled.

Siyavuya: look we don't have to do it if you're scared. I'm okay with it. Trust me I am. After all you make the rules

Me: I do?

I asked surprised. He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: yes we can watch a movie just cuddled up here but I'm not wearing my t-shirt back it's hot

Me: yes it is hot. Thank you by the way

Siyavuya: ohh no it's fine and you made a big problem

Me: what are you... ohh now I see

I laughed looking at him. He shook his head getting off the couch covering himself aroused.

Me: take a cold show

Siyavuya: in the meantime make something for us to eat not unless you're lazy to do it

Me: if I am?

Siyavuya: I don't mind having to do it

Me: please do the honours then

He chuckled.

Siyavuya: let me go take a shower first and you taste amazing by the way

He said that licking his finger. I laughed throwing him one the pillow. He headed upstairs. I picked up a horror movie called Get Out. I just wanted to watch something scary that's all. I headed to the kitchen. I took some snacks then headed back to the lounge. I sat on the couch. Siyavuya came downstairs after some time. He looked fresh. He took my panties and put it in his pocket.

Me: are you crazy?

Siyavuya: nope I'm not. I'm going to need this after all

Me: so you can gift it to your bitches? Hell no

He looked at me squinting his eyes.

Siyavuya: why would I be in a relationship with anyone else while I'm in a relationship with you?

Me: fake relationship actually

Siyavuya: talking about that what if I don't want it to be fake anymore? What if I want something real? What's going to happen?

I just took the remote. I didn't want to debate about this.

Siyavuya: I asked you a question

Me: can we not do this now?

Siyavuya: even if it means having to annoy you I'm going to do that but I need answers and I'm not kidding

Me: why do you want us to fight?

Everything was perfectly fine

Siyavuya: you brought it up so it has to be discussed. We have to talk about this. I'm not trying to fight with you believe me. I just want to know where I stand I mean it has been a month and here we are

Me: please let's not do this now

Siyavuya: Simyolisiwe I just want to know

Me: give me 24 hours please.

Siyavuya: okay but that doesn't mean I won't be seeing you. I just enjoy being with you

I chuckled.

Me: of course you will see me. We will eventually talk about this Sunday right now I'm not in the mood I'm sorry

Siyavuya: it's perfectly fine and I'm so sorry

Me: no it's fine



He smiled looking at me. I shook my head looking at him.

Siyavuya: let's watch Get Out. Do you still need me to make something for the both of us?

Me: I would actually to taste anything made by you

Siyavuya: ohh really?

Me: yes I do. I mean you have tasted my food before

Siyavuya: yes I tasted both and it was amazing

Me: fuck you

We both laughed.

Siyavuya: I might do it later on but right now can we please

Me: okay sir

We both laughed. I played the movie laying on Siyavuya's chest. Honestly speaking the past month has been nothing but the best for me. I don't want to lie about whole of this. Siyavuya made it a point that he comes to see me when he has time. He always takes me out in different places and it so romantic of him. His family? I would see them when Siyavuya is the mood so let me just say I only saw them four times and that's that. Things between me and Siyavuya are perfectly amazing. Most of the time when we're together we would cuddle ourselves to sleep. Yes we would kiss there and there. I mean we enjoy each other but at the same we shouldn't been doing that but it feels so amazing. I just love it. I don't

want to lie to myself. Do I love Siyavuya?  
Did this one month make a difference  
between the two of us? Unfortunately  
there's a lot I can say. I mean I just love it  
when Siyavuya is always there it just makes  
me happy. I've never been this happier in  
my entire life. Let me just say I never  
experienced anything like this because I got  
pregnant when I was very young and I never  
even had a boyfriend. Me being pregnant  
just messed things up. The only thing I'm  
afraid that things won't be the same  
between me and Siyavuya as they are. I just  
want them to be perfect that's all.

## SEVEN

Siyavuya decided to sleep here yesterday I let him be. We slept together and nothing happened between the two of us. We just slept together that's all. I don't want to lie but I enjoyed myself with Siyavuya as always. He's a good company and a loving person. I have to say again he's a romantic guy. He literally knows how to make me happy. Ever since he came into my life. He literally changed everything and I somehow love that. I've never been this happier in my life because of a guy. Well Melusi did make me happy there and there but he is married if it wasn't that way I wonder how things would have been. I just don't want to go back to the same dark space again having to be insulted.

I was at the kitchen making something for both me and Siyavuya. I just woke up and Siyavuya is still asleep. I see he loves sleeping and so do I but at weekends it's basically that way. I don't know why I woke up early but I woke up happy and energetic. I was wearing my short night dress without sleepers. It was hot. I startled as Siyavuya wrapped his hands around my waist. He chuckled kissing my neck. I dished up for him and I. I was still in shock trust me. I don't know if I will ever get used to that because wow. It's all new to me that's the problem. I sat on the kitchen counter and had my breakfast.

Siyavuya: you're seriously not going to say anything to me?

Me: I'm sorry just that you scared me

Siyavuya: I'm sorry. I thought you're used to that

Me: hell no it's all new to me

He chuckled looking at me then back to my thighs.

Me: I see you're really hungry

Siyavuya: you have no idea

I chuckled as he couldn't take his eyes off my thighs. I opened them wider in purpose.

I wanted to see what he was going to do.

He cleared his throat drinking his juice.

Siyavuya: what are we going to do today?

Me: I don't have nothing in my mind do you?

Siyavuya: uhmm... ohh God

He said that as I brushed my thigh.

Me: are you okay?

Siyavuya: yes I'm okay

Me: you will tell me what is it that you want us to do when you're fully yourself

Siyavuya: yes I will

I got off the counter then I washed my plate and glass. I headed upstairs to my room. I took off my night dress then headed to the en-suite. I took a quick shower then did the necessity. I wore my oversized t-shirt with my shoes. I headed downstairs to the lounge. I found Siyavuya watching Growing Up Hip Hop. He has freshened up. I sat next to him taking the remote. I put on Channel 124 E! Entertainment – Dating: No Filter was playing. Siyavuya looked at me squinting his eyes.

Me: don't look at me like that

Siyavuya: you saw that I was watching the TV right?

Me: yeah, so what?

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: we can watch your stupid show

Me: don't do it for me, do it because you want to do it

Siyavuya: well I do

Me: you said my stupid show so isn't it obviously that you're doing it for me?

Siyavuya: and if I was?

Me: that would be cute clearly stating the fact that you love me

Siyavuya: isn't it obvious?



I looked at him astonished. He looked at me with his beautiful eyes. I didn't know what to say. Was he just saying that because I said that he loves me? Or he is it that because he really loves me? I just don't know what to believe but I hope it's something I want to hear that will eventually put a smile on my face.

Me: you do?

Siyavuya: I won't lie to myself but yes I do. The past few month has been nothing but the best for me. I know one shouldn't have caught feelings but I fell in love with you everyday. Seeing you everyday and spending time with you just made me love you. I wanted to stop and avoid what I had for you but I couldn't because what I have for you is genuine. I love you Simyolisiwe. I

really do love you. I would actually love for you to be with me despite you having a child. I want you with all your flaws. I know you're probably think that no one will love you because you had a child at a young age but that doesn't mean anything trust me. I want to be in your life. I hope I haven't crossed my limit

Me: uhmm... wow

I didn't know what to say. I headed out of the house. I sat by the pool side. I won't lie to myself and say that I haven't felt anything at all the past month when we spent most of our time together. I felt something for Siyavuya. We actually have a chemistry and I love it. I love how things are between me and Siyavuya. I just never thought it was going get to the point where

one would admit that they love one another. Do I have feelings for him? Yes I do. I just love how Siyavuya has made me feel like a woman. I just love what he did showing me something I've never experienced in my life. I'm happy Siyavuya was able to meet up with the standards I need especially when it comes from a man. I wanted my life with a guy to be actually that way especially when we're getting to know each other to us having to be dating loving each other unconditional. I don't know what to expect if I happen to be in a relationship with Siyavuya. I just want to be happy once in my life that's all. I just don't want my heart to be broken that's all. I don't want to be made a fool because I'm not too experienced in this dating thing

having to be committed to that individual person. I just want things to go accordingly if ever I want to make things work out between me and Siyavuya. I actually want things to work out for the both of us.

I got off the floor then I headed back inside the house. I found Siyavuya on a phone call. He didn't look so good. It seemed like he was going through a lot. I see he thought I was going to run away and never come back but this is my house. Siyavuya looked at me. I walked up to him then I got on top off him. I don't know why I did that and my heart was racing. I smashed my lips on him. He kissed me back squeezing my ass. We shared a passionate kiss and I broke the kiss because I was out of breath. We both

chuckled looking at each other with our foreheads touching each other.

Me: I'm sorry

Siyavuya: no, that was amazing

Me: really?

Siyavuya: yes but you made a mess

Me: I'm sorry about that

He chuckled. I knew what he was talking about.

Siyavuya: I thought you were going to run away and never come back because of what I said to you

Me: this is my house actually

We both laughed.

Me: I just needed to think about this. I didn't want to make irrational decision. I

just wanted to know if I want the same thing or not. I mean this is all new to me

Siyavuya: you never had a boyfriend before?

Me: yes I never did

Siyavuya: one of the cool popular guy at school broke your virginity?

Me: you got that right. Ohh God it was embarrassing because I thought I was loved only for me to open my legs for that nigga. If I see him, I will eventually kill him because he actually messed up my life

He laughed laying his head on my breasts.

Siyavuya: serves you right. They were lot of guys at your school though

Me: he was handsome and I wanted him

Siyavuya: and you got him then he played you

Me: fuck you Siya

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: can you please be my girlfriend?

Me: why the hell would you love someone who has a kid?

He looked at me with a bored look. I giggled looking at him.

Me: what?

Siyavuya: don't bore me please

Me: I'm just asking

Siyavuya: I love you and I want to be with you not to mention your daughter

Me: the fuck?

He laughed. I shook my head chuckling.

Me: you sure amaze me

Siyavuya: I know but you know that Mandisa wants us to be together right?

Me: I even forgot about that

Siyavuya: she literally said I'm your boyfriend the first time I saw her then obviously yesterday she did the same thing in purpose

Me: won't you break my heart though?

Siyavuya: look at me

I looked at him.

Siyavuya: do I look like I will break your heart?

I chuckled looking at him. I shrugged my shoulders looking at him.



Siyavuya: I won't break your heart. I got good intentions for you

Me: you do?

Siyavuya: yes I do. Can you please stop asking me obvious things? Because wow girl you're making me mad

I laughed looking at him. He pouted shaking his head. I gave him a peck.

Me: I want to be your girlfriend

He smashed his lips onto mine. We shared a passionate kiss with the both of us smiling.

Siyavuya: thank you

Me: I shouldn't be dating you though

Siyavuya: so you're dumping me already?

I shook my head chuckling. He squeezed my ass.

Me: I see you love sex

Siyavuya: I won't lie to you since you're my girlfriend. Of course I do and you have an amazing tempting body I just can't stop looking at it

Me: that's why you were looking at my thighs earlier in the morning when we were eating?

Siyavuya: no wait... you saw me?

I nodded smiling.

Siyavuya: that's why you opened your legs ohh God. You're such a bad girl

I blushed hugging him.

Me: you could have touched me though

Siyavuya: then having for you to slap me?

Hell no

Me: I'm not a violent person

Siyavuya: ohh please remember when I kissed your personal assistant next to you, you slapped me then said I'm a whore. It still hurts me that you said that

Me: you kissed my personal assistant. What the hell did you expect? You were my boyfriend

Siyavuya: no one knew we were together and you know why I kissed her

Me: it wasn't my intention to make you jealous

Siyavuya: ohh please I did what you did

Me: he kissed me and before I could stop things from going further he brought me close to him then obviously you saw me

enjoying what I shouldn't have been enjoying. It wasn't me trust me

Siyavuya: but again I don't want you close to him

Me: and I don't want you close to her because we're going to have a huge problem

Siyavuya: what are you going to do?

Me: please don't test me. I'll beat the shit out of you

He laughed looking at me. I shook my head smiling.

Me: I'm serious

Siyavuya: and if you don't get away from him I will punish you

Me: ohh really? What are you doing?

Siyavuya: I'll eventually do BDSM onto you

Me: fuck no

Siyavuya: I'm kidding but I will do this

He slid his hand on my panty. He rubbed my clit slowly. I moaned softly closing my eyes. I grab held his bicep as he inserted his two fingers onto me. He went in deeper and finger fucked.

Me: ohh... wait

Not that he was hurting me or anything I just didn't want things to go further. I mean it's too early for us to have sex but I don't mind him touching me and doing all the fantasy at me. Siyavuya gave me a peck as he stopped himself. I bit his lower lip then looked at him.

Siyavuya: there's more into that by the way

Me: I know

Siyavuya: you really taste amazing

Me: you actually told me

He licked his fingers. I shook my head  
looking at him.

Siyavuya: so how are we going to do this?

Me: the way it has to be done

Siyavuya: at least you've met my family

Me: so you also want me to introduce you  
to my family?

Siyavuya: well yes

Me: after 6 months

Siyavuya: okay

Me: you're sure?

Siyavuya: yes I'm sure baby girl

I rolled my eyes looking at him. He chuckled kissing my cheek.

Siyavuya: you're such an amazing person  
Mandisa's mother

Me: thank you Siyavuya

Siyavuya: that's no longer my name. I'm baby okay?

Me: okay baby

I giggled looking at him.

Me: let us watch The Real Housewives of Johannesburg

Siyavuya: no it's best we watch a movie

Me: but it's my favourite

Siyavuya: well you will be able to watch it on your spare time

Me: you're such a bully

Siyavuya: I'm not

I got off on top of him. I sat next to him as we cuddled. He chose Good Burger such an old movie I've watched several times with my daughter. She loves it so much it's actually her favourite and I hate it. I don't want to lie to myself.



## EIGHT

Siyavuya: baby?

I looked at him. He had his eyes focused on my toes. Well he decided to apply nail polish on my toes. I don't know why but that was so cute of him. He started off by washing my feet then having to apply lotion on them then he did apply the toe nail. And he is so perfect on it. I don't want to lie.

Me: funa ntoni?

- What do you want?

Siyavuya: ukugqiba kwami apha I want us to go out to have something to eat. I'm so lazy to cook

- When I'm done here...

Me: you didn't bring your clothes. I'll cook don't worry

Siyavuya: I'll drive to my house real quick

Me: okay it's fine

Siyavuya: I'm done

He looked at me smiling.

Siyavuya: tomorrow you're going to do your nails. I really hate that colour

Me: you hate pink?

Siyavuya: I hate it so bad. You're going to do white long ass nails

Me: okay go

Siyavuya: ohh yeah. I'll be back before you know it

He gave me a peck then he headed out of the house. My phone rang. It was Melusi. I answered the phone sighing heading to my room upstairs.

Me: what can I do for you?

Melusi: seems like I caught you off at the bad time

Me: of course you did

Melusi: look Siwe I'm sorry about yesterday

Me: it's fine Melusi. You don't have to be worried about who I bring into my house. You just need to focus on yourself, your wife and your kids that's all

Melusi: I will do that

Me: thank you. How is my daughter?

Melusi: she's doing fine. She's playing with the others

Me: please tell her that I love her so much and she will see me tomorrow

Melusi: I will tell her

Me: I have to go

Melusi: have a nice day

Me: same applies to you

I disconnected the phone after I said that. I took off my dress then I headed to the ensuite. I took a quick shower then I did the necessity. I wore my black tight dress with my heels. I did my hair then I headed downstairs as I got done. I poured myself a glass of wine then I gulped it down.

Someone knocked on the door. I went to attend it. I rolled my eyes as I saw Melusi. He let himself in the house.

Me: something's wrong?

Melusi: where are you going?

Me: it doesn't concern you

He chuckled.

Me: you shouldn't be here

Melusi: I just came to see you

Me: as you can see I have somewhere to be so please leave

A knock came on the door and I knew it was Siyavuya.

Me: please

He looked at me then he made his way out. I took my important stuff then I headed out. I saw Melusi talking with Siyavuya. I shook my head heading out to Siyavuya's car. He joined me after some time. He drove off with music playing.

Siyavuya: you look beautiful baby

Me: thank you and you don't look bad yourself

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: thank you baby

He kissed my hand looking at the road.

Me: what were you two talking about?  
Because the last time I checked you're not  
friends

Siyavuya: he was asking me to leave you  
alone

Me: ohh really?

Siyavuya: yes, you see I told you that he  
loves you? I mean if he didn't he would  
have told me to treat you good not him  
telling me leave you because I won't

I shook my head.

Me: he will have to accept the fact that I'm  
with you

Siyavuya: exactly, bottom line

I laughed shaking my head.

Me: don't tell me you also love Khanyisa Jaceni

Siyavuya: yhoo baby ndimthanda ukufa lamntu

- I love that person to death

Me: I just love how she carries herself, I love how confident she is, I love her smile, I love her body yhooo baby I just love her and her voice yhooo andfuni noythetha

- I don't want to talk about it

Siyavuya was looking at me smiling.

Me: what is it? Do I have something on my face?

Siyavuya: ohh no baby you look absolutely fine. Just that you look beautiful and I actually love seeing you this way

Me: ohh please

Siyavuya: I love you okay?

Me: I love you too

Siyavuya: we're gonna get through this together okay?

I nodded looking at him. He pulled over at some restaurant. He got out of the car then opened the door for me. We headed inside the restaurant. A waiter came running to us. She took us in the empty table and gave us menus. I already had in mind what is it that I wanted to eat. We ordered and our food was bought. We indulged in our food.

Siyavuya: next week I'm leaving

Me: for business purposes?

Siyavuya: yes but the problem is that I don't want to leave



Me: you're leaving and please don't tell me that it is because of me. You're leaving and you will then come back

Siyavuya: I can have my PA going there

Me: ayy baby yahamba

- You're going

Siyavuya: can we go together then?

Me: I have a business to run

Siyavuya: I know you do but please

Me: I can only leave my PA in charge because I'm here in Joburg and if I'm out here who's going to take care of my business? Ayy baby I don't know

Siyavuya: you still have time to think about it

Me: I will see about it

He held my hand. I looked at him.

Siyavuya: I'm not forcing you

Me: I know you're not

He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: you should tell Mandisa about us

I giggled.

Me: she's going to be happy

Siyavuya: I will tell her myself tomorrow

Me: please do

He smiled looking at me. I don't know what to say but Siyavuya is just an amazing person. I just hope things will still be the same way with the both of us in the upcoming months because I really love this. I don't want to lie to myself.



- 
- 

I had just dropped my daughter at school. She was busy telling me about how her weekend was. She was so happy. Siyavuya couldn't even tell her that we're together because my daughter was just so happy and I loved seeing that way.

I just got at the office. I saw everyone busy pacing up and down. I wonder what's wrong. Ashley ran up to me. I sighed as we headed to my office. She took my coat and hanged it on the coat hanger.

Me: what's wrong?

Ashley: Mr Khoza is coming. He called few minutes ago

Me: I literally forgot about him. I don't even have the presentation with me

Ashley: you can check the one I've made. I did it just in case

Me: give it to me

She gave me the presentation. I went through it and read it thoroughly so. I have to say it was very good. I sure give it to her. I smiled looking at her as I have got done reading it.

Me: I love it

Ashley: really?

She asked looking at me smiling.

Me: it's really good. I never thought you'd pull it off. When I get done with Mr Khoza I'd love to talk to you

Ashley: is something wrong?

Me: ohh no, nothing's wrong. I just want to say some few words with you that's all

Ashley: okay mam. Do you do anything?

Me: just get the boardroom ready I'll be there in few minutes

Ashley: okay mam

She headed out of my office. I went through the presentation again then I took the necessary things and headed out to the boardroom. I found Mr Khoza there seated. I wasn't in a mood to talk or do anything. I sat next to him then I gave him the presentation and the necessary things. He didn't say anything. He went through the presentation. He kept nodding as he went through it. He looked at me after some time.

Mr Khoza: this is a good

Me: really?

Mr Khoza: yes, I will have to get back to you after two weeks because I have somewhere to be

Me: okay sir

Mr Khoza: so you know what to do?

Me: I know

Mr Khoza: and by the way keep it up. I never thought I'd say this but you sure know what you're doing. I mean one wouldn't say that you started this company three years ago and look where it is now

Me: and I did it all alone

Mr Khoza: really?

Me: yes

Mr Khoza: where were your parents? I mean your elder siblings also where were they?

I sighed looking at him.

Me: they disowned me as I got pregnant 7 years ago. I couldn't get it why they did that. I mean I know I shouldn't have gotten pregnant at a young age but I don't know what happened. Despite me getting pregnant at the young age I love my daughter so much everyone knows it here

He looked at me smiling.

Mr Khoza: the father of the girl?

Me: ohh he's there for his daughter even though he's married and has kids of his own

Mr Khoza: he's a good man I see

Me: he is

He smiled looking at me.

Mr Khoza: I should have my son to come up here before I leave

Me: ohh really?

Mr Khoza: yes I just want him to come here to check up how things are. I will come with him

Me: okay sir

Mr Khoza: let me leave you because I know you have important things to do

Me: of course I do sir

Mr Khoza: I'll see you some time this week

Me: okay sir

Mr Khoza: stay well

Me: same applies to you sir



He headed out of the boardroom with the things I had for him. I went back into my office Ashley got inside.

Me: I got a promotion for you

Ashley: are you serious?

Me: yeah I'm giving you a raise and I need a favour

Ashley: anything mam

Me: I will talk with you about it in few days until now. I just need to make a decision that's all

Ashley: okay mam. How is Mandisa doing?

Me: she's doing very good

Siyavuya got in the office carrying lunch. He put the doggy bag on the table. He gave me a peck. Ashley cleared her throat standing up.

Me: apologize

Siyavuya: I'm sorry how are you?

Ashley: I'm good sir and bye guys

Us: bye girl

She walked out.

Siyavuya: you look different

Me: do I?

I asked looking at him smiling.

Siyavuya: yes you look beautiful

Me: ohh please. I'm hungry let us eat and talk about my daughter

Siyavuya: you talked with her?

Me: she's still telling me about her weekend

Siyavuya: she won't stop

Me: she won't. I guess I should always throw her at Melusi's house every weekend or an entire week

He laughed. I shook my head smiling looking at him.

## NINE

My phone rang at the kitchen counter. I stood up from the couch wanting to go take it but my daughter came running with it. I thanked her taking the phone from her. I checked the caller ID. It was Melusi. I sighed answering the phone. I just hope he's calling me because he wants to ask about Mandisa if not then he should stop what he's doing because it is starting to irritate me. I don't want to lie.

Me: I hope you've called me because of Mandisa nothing more if that's not the case then don't even dare say anything that will irritate me. I'm working here and I don't want us to be on bad terms. Trust me I don't. So what do you want? Should I call Mandisa for you? Or what?

I heard him sigh over the phone. I shook my head busy on my laptop doing another presentation for Siyavuya since we work together.

Melusi: well it's in both ways — look I want to talk to Mandisa it's true and I want to talk to you too. Look I'm sorry for the way I have been acting the past few days just the idea of you being in a relationship surprises me. I mean I never knew you would get in a relationship despite how we were towards each other. I guess I just can't accept the fact that someone has you now and I mean should be happy you found someone who loves you. A person who loves and accept you the way you are despite you having a child. I'm happy for you trust me. I just hope this guy treats you good. I don't want

anything to happen to you. Trust me I don't. I will leave you to be with your boyfriend in peace and I will focus on loving my wife here

I shook my head smiling. I never thought he would say that. It's so amazing he actually did and that he gave me his blessings even though it shouldn't have been that way. But I'm happy he didn't fight with me about this whole thing.

Me: thank you so much. I never thought I'd hear you say that to me. I mean one wouldn't say that you love me while you're in love with your wife too. I know it's hard having to watch me to be with someone else but I also deserve to be with someone who's going to love and cherish every moment with me. I mean you have it all and

I don't. Not that I don't just that I need someone in my life who's literally going to satisfy my needs and wants. I mean I do. I have been single for way too long and now I finally found someone in such a short period of time. I don't know if I never met him and having for him to ask me to be his acting girlfriend things would have been this way but I'm glad I took that change. I'm just happy. I deserve to be happy and I deserve this princess treatment I'm getting from my man

I heard him chuckle over the phone. I shook my head smiling. A knock came on the door and I knew it could be Precious or Siyavuya. Mandisa as hype as she is she ran to open the door.

Melusi: I'm happy for you

Me: thank you so much

Mandisa appeared pulling my sister and brother. I sighed wondering what do they want now. I may have forgiven them but at some point I don't want to have any sort of relationship with them. I mean they disowned me 7 years ago and they decided to come back months ago. It's just something I won't fall for. There's something they want from me and I don't think I will be able to give it to them.

Sanelisiwe and Siyanda are something. I just won't be able to handle them. They greeted me taking their sit.

Me: Mandisa!

She came running to me.

Me: you can talk with your daughter I have guests



Melusi: okay thank you

Me: that your daughter

He laughed. I chuckled giving Mandisa my phone.

Me: don't do anything on my phone just talk with your father okay?

Mandisa: yes mommy

She ran upstairs to her room with my phone. I typed the entire presentation then I saved it because I want to edit it later on. I looked at my guests folding my hands.

Me: what can I do for you both in my house?

Sanelisiwe: I want to invite you at the party that's going to be held at my house Saturday

Me: ohh a party? Wow okay. Do I need to come with my daughter?

Sanelisiwe: it's strictly for adults

Me: I'll have to talk to her father I guess. What else is needed?

Sanelisiwe: a partner

Me: theme?

Sanelisiwe: it's red and black

Me: why does it seem like you're doing a party for people who love sex?

They laughed. I just chuckled looking at them.

Siyanda: no it's not that way

Me: I'll see from there I guess. Anything else?

They looked at each other speaking with their eyes. I don't really trust them. There's something they're planning to do and it won't work out.

Siyanda: there's nothing else

Me: okay you know your way out

I took my laptop and went through the presentation.

Sanelisiwe: who's going to be in here while you will be at my house?

Me: why are you asking?

Sanelisiwe: we're just asking. I mean have you seen your house

Me: well it doesn't concern you who's going to be at my house when I'm not going to be available in here

Sanelisiwe: you don't need to be rude

Me: I'm not being rude. I'm just talking to you and answering the question you've asked

Sanelisiwe: okay if you say so then

I heard footsteps fading away and I know immediately when someone walks out of the house the door locks itself and someone inside has to open the door.

Whatever that these two are planning I hope they get hurt because I won't tolerate someone asking me about my house. I had this house when I was 19. I know everything about it. I took my phone then I called my trusted friend who's a gangster. We've been friends ever since I was pregnant. It's kind of a long story on how we met each other but it's a funny and cute story.

Aqhamile answered the phone after some

time. I heard screams over the phone. I guess he's working.

Me: I guess I caught you in bad time

Aqhamile: when you call I answer no matter how busy how I am. I mean you're my friend. Who knows ukba udinga usizo lwami then mna andiphenduli phone so no you didn't catch me in bad time

- Who knows that you need my help then I don't answer the phone so no you didn't catch me in bad time

I shook my head smiling.

Me: uright mara?

- You're good though

Aqhamile: I'm good just that I missed you and I have been seen you

Me: why didn't you come see me?

Aqhamile: interrupt you with your boyfriend? Ayy I would never do that

Me: I need a favour

Aqhamile: what is it now?

Me: you remember my so called family?

Aqhamile: they're back?

Me: they came months back asking for forgiveness so I forgave them just for the sake of your niece maye inxaki iza kwi sibilings zami kukho into abafuna ukuyenza

- Now the problem is my sibilings there's something they want to do

Aqhamile: should I do a background check up on them?

Me: yeah I never asked about how they're doing in life. I mean I don't care and I just don't understand how they found me

Aqhamile: give me 30 minutes then I will get back to you

Me: please do

Aqhamile: okay let me get back to it

Me: okay

I disconnected the phone after saying that. My phone rang again and it was Aqhamile. I guess he has found everything but that was quick. I answered the phone.

Aqhamile: kukho inxaki apha

- There's a problem here

Me: what's wrong?

He chuckled.

Aqhamile: your siblings got themselves in deep trouble like they involved themselves with this feared gangster who goes by the

name of Ace. His real name is Banele Khoza he's 25 years old. His father is a businessman who's Mark Khoza. So what your siblings did here is that they asked for a million kwi Ace and now they haven't paid it back so now Ace made them work for him so they can pay back the full amount. This Saturday there's a party there like they're lot of people who are going to attend there and I assume your siblings asked you to come there?

Me: yes they asked me then they asked about who's going to be in my house while I will be at the party and that's why I called you

Aqhamile: your siblings want to take your house like change every code in the house. There's a safe there right?



Me: you know that obviously you helped me out with it

Aqhamile: they want what's inside there

Me: I will kill these two you know

Aqhamile: you'll be going to Ace's house not their house. They're just afraid that you will judge them because they stay at a brick stone house

Me: I don't care what they live

Aqhamile: they wanted that million because they wanted to buy the house. They bought the house but Ace took it because he wants his money back

Me: he did a good thing. Why didn't they work for the money? They think that they will take my money? They have another

thing coming. Look I want you to come  
guide my house Saturday

Aqhamile: I will come with someone. Don't  
worry you can trust him

Me: okay and does my father have Cancer?  
He chuckled.

Aqhamile: he said that to you?

Me: yeah what's wrong?

Aqhamile: they lied to you. It was just a way  
of them wanting to get back in your life. I  
mean you have money and that luxury  
house that's why they lied to you and you  
fell for it

Me: I can't believe this. I was even close on  
taking him to the best doctors so they can  
cure what I thought he had only to find out  
that they lied to me. I should have known

Aqhamile: act like you don't know. It will catch up to them

Me: I hope so

A knock came on the door. Mandisa came running down the stairs. She went to get the door.

Me: I hope they get punished and I don't mean you doing it

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Mandisa got inside Siyavuya. He sat next to me then gave me a peck.

Aqhamile: let me get back to punishing someone

Me: what did that person do?

Aqhamile: you will laugh if I tell you so no

Me: okay I'll see you Saturday

Aqhamile: I love you

Me: I love you too

I disconnected the phone after I said that. I looked at Siyavuya.

Siyavuya: thanda bani sisi?

- Who do you love?

Me: are you jealous?

I asked getting on top of him.

Siyavuya: it has been hours I haven't heard you telling me that

Me: so what? I was busy with your presentation

Siyavuya: eish I forgot about it

Me: and that was my friend

Siyavuya: Precious?

Me: Aqhamile you will see him Saturday and Saturday we have been invited into a party

Siyavuya: by who?

Me: my so called siblings

Siyavuya: okay I will be there

Me: you're gonna wear black

Siyavuya: wasn't planning on wearing any colour

Me: what if I said you were going to wear red while I wear black?

Siyavuya: it would have been best if we both have worn black

Me: okay if you say so. You look hot

He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: do I?

Me: yes you do

He gave me a peck.

Siyavuya: let me see the presentation

I got off on top of him then I gave him my laptop. He went through the presentation then he smiled looking at me. I rolled my eyes taking the laptop back in the table.

Siyavuya: that was amazing

Me: I know what I'm doing ohh God

Siyavuya: I know. Let us eat I'm hungry

Me: I hope you gave one to Mandisa

Siyavuya: when we got inside I did

I nodded. He gave me one of the doggy bag. I took out my burger then started indulging in it while we watched a movie together. I had to take a break after all. If I won't do

something to my siblings they won't stop  
and they have to stop because they're going  
to get themselves killed. I just can't believe  
they all lied to me. Mxm.

## TEN

FEW DAYS LATER...

I was wearing my heels getting ready for the party I was invited at by my so called siblings. I wanted to cancel but I didn't want to make it obvious that I know what they have planned for me. It really irritates me. I don't want to lie. It makes me wanna puke. I don't know how I'm going to be able to do this but I just hope I won't be that rude because I know I will be. I headed downstairs with my phone and my sling black bag. I poured myself a glass of wine then I gulped it down. A door knock interrupted my thoughts. I headed to the door. I opened it then I threw myself on Aqhamile. He laughed hugging me tightly. I have seriously missed him so bad. I don't



want to lie. He let go off me then kissed my forehead.

Aqhamile: you look so beautiful

Me: thank you so much

Aqhamile: you're seriously going there?

He asked as we sat at the bar stools. I looked at him smiling.

Me: do you think I want to go there? Of course not. I'm going there so they wouldn't notice that I know what they've planned against their little sister

He chuckled looking at me.

Aqhamile: wouldn't wish for them to be my siblings

Me: that's me right now

Aqhamile: my guy will arrive anytime soon.  
Did they send you the location to the house  
or they're going to fetch you both?

Me: they've sent me the location which is a  
good move

Aqhamile: don't be surprised when you see  
a dead body

Me: you still think I'm that girl?

Aqhamile: ohh please. Remember what you  
did the first time? You almost got me  
arrested

Me: and you pointed me with a gun then  
threatened me. I was surprised. I mean  
we've known each other for 10 months but  
you didn't tell me that you were a gangster

Aqhamile: if I told you the first time we  
became friends you would have cursed at

me then we wouldn't have been friends until this very day. I mean 7 years is no game

Me: I agree with you but then me being your friend you taught me lot of things

Aqhamile: you forced me so I had to do it

Me: I know. You still know the code right?

Aqhamile: yes I do

A door knock interrupted us. I took my sling bag and my phone then I headed to the door with Aqhamile. He opened the door. There stood Siyavuya looking handsome on his suit. He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: uhmm hey. I'm...

Aqhamile interrupted him.

Aqhamile: I know who you are dude. You don't need to introduce yourself. Just take

good care of her that's all I'm asking you.

And again I'm watching you

Siyavuya: okay. You look beautiful

Me: thank you so much. You know what is it that you should right?

He took out his gun and showed me.

Aqhamile: I know. Enjoy yourself

Me: really funny dude

Aqhamile: okay bye

Me: bye

He kissed my forehead then I headed out with Siyavuya. He opened the door for me. I got inside then he got to his side. He drove off with music playing.

Siyavuya: that was Aqhamile?

Me: yes that was him

Siyavuya: he was carrying a gun

Me: he always does

Siyavuya: what if Mandisa plays with the gun?

Me: he's always careful. You don't need to be worried everything is perfectly fine

Siyavuya: okay baby but then you look stupendous baby

I giggled rolling my eyes.

Me: thank you baby

He touched my thigh. I let him be.

Siyavuya: when is Mandisa coming back home?

Me: obviously tomorrow night

Siyavuya: can you please sleep at my house?

Me: sure it's fine. We won't stay that long at the party we're going to

Siyavuya: okay that's okay with me. As long I'll be with you all night then I'm okay with that

Me: thank you sthandwa sami

- Thank you so much my love

He quickly looked at me smiling.

Siyavuya: ohh wow

Me: what?

Siyavuya: can you please say it again?

I giggled looking at him.

Me: sthandwa sami

- My love

Siyavuya: ohh God this is why I love you so much

Me: ohh please

Siyavuya: I seriously do though

Me: I know. We have reached our final destination

Siyavuya: your siblings stay here?

I shrugged my shoulders. He got out of the car then opened the door for me. We headed inside the house. We were welcomed by a waiter giving us glasses of red wine. I shook my head seeing how beautiful the house looked. I just don't understand why my siblings would ask for a loan. They could have took out R500 000 each then buy a house. Ace that's the name. I guess he has so much money. I mean it is said that he is a gangster so yeah anything is possible. Everyone looked beautiful in here. I saw my siblings

approaching us. I faked a smile looking at them.

Siyanda: you look so beautiful sister

I chuckled rolling my eyes.

Me: thank you

Sanelisiwe: you're welcomed in here

I nodded looking at her.

Siyanda: do you mind introducing us to him?

Me: ohh I forgot. This is my boyfriend Siyavuya and baby these are my siblings Siyanda and Sanelisiwe

Siyavuya: nice to meet you guys

Them: same applies

A good looking guy came our way. He looked at me then back at my siblings.



Him: leave us

My siblings left leaving us with this person I don't know.

Him: I don't know you both

Me: we also don't know you so the feeling is mutual

He chuckled looking at me.

Him: I saw a resemblance between you and Sanelisiwe

Me: ohh really?

Him: yes can you please give us a minute alone?

He asked looking at Siyavuya. I nodded looking at him. He walked away leaving me with this person.

Him: your so called siblings owe me

Me: what does it have to do with me? If you want to do something to them then why don't you do it? I don't care

Him: I thought...

I interrupted him.

Me: you thought wrong and I guess you're Banele Khoza thee Ace

He chuckled looking at me.

Banele: you got that right and you're Simyolisiwe Nxubo. You have a 7 year old daughter named Mandisa. His father Melusi is married

Me: I see you've done your research

Banele: I know everyone here and I had to know you also

Me: well you do now. Look do whatever you want to do to them. I don't know why

you didn't punish them because if you did they would have paid you back and I'm not going to be giving no one my money. I worked hard for it to go to waste because of those two irresponsible siblings. I got a life that I should live. I was perfectly fine without them and I'm still fine. I hate talking about this

Banele: I know it frustrates you

Me: you know what to do

Banele: I can't believe I will be listening to you

Me: you don't have a choice. You have to make them fear you they will pay you back the money just give them a minimum of a year or two okay?

He nodded looking at me.

Me: punish them first then tell them that you'll be giving them a minimum of a year or two to pay up for the money they owe you then yeah. They should learn their lesson

Banele: you're being honest. I see you know a thing about gangsters

Me: let just say I became friends with a person who's a gangster then I learned a thing or two about what you guys do. I hated it at first but now I love it so bad. I don't want my daughter to be exposed to it that why I stopped

Banele: she's old enough though

Me: she's 7 Banele

We both laughed looking at each other. I can't believe I'm sharing a laugh with him. I

touched Banele's shoulder then I went to his ear.

Me: let's look at my siblings then wave at them smiling

He nodded looking at me. We looked over at my siblings then waved at them. They nodded back looking at us weirdly.

Me: now can I go to my boyfriend? I might as well get fucked it has been 8 years

Banele: okay I didn't need to know that but you know they're dildos right?

Me: I prefer this

I said that touching his dick. I walked away after doing that. I shook my head smiling as I looked at Siyavuya. He was seated by the pull side having a glass of whiskey. I sat next to him.

Me: are you okay?

Siyavuya: how can I be okay when my own fucking girlfriend touched someone else's dick? Like seriously Simyolisiwe?

Me: I didn't think it was going to be a big deal. It ain't like there's a relationship I share with him

Siyavuya: you touched him then you come and sit next to me

Me: you want me to say I'm sorry. Well I'm sorry I touched his big dick

Siyavuya: ohh please fuck you

Me: fuck me? Really Siyavuya? Fuck you too. What the fuck?

I headed back inside the house. I headed upstairs to one of the rooms. I got there then I headed to the en-suite. I splashed

water on my face then I wiped it. I sighed going back to the room. I startled as I saw Banele seated on the bed. I guess I got in his room.

Me: I'm sorry I didn't know I was in your room

Banele: it's fine. I'm sorry

Me: for what?

Banele: I saw

Me: you saw? Wow of course you did. This is your house

I chuckled sitting on the bed next to him.

Me: would you have got mad too?

Banele: obviously I would what did you expect?

Me: I honestly thought he didn't see me but clearly I was wrong. He said fuck me

Banele: you said I had a big dick what the hell did you expect him to say to you? You expected him to be cool with that? You were wrong. You were wrong

Me: ohh please fuck you I heard you the first time. No need to repeat it as if I don't have ears

He held me by my neck. I looked at him with a bored look then I removed his hand. He held me by my neck then brought me close to him. He smashed his lips on mine. I don't know what happened but I found myself kissing him back. He made me sit on top of him. He grabbed my ass. I moaned softly as he lifted my dress up. He rubbed my clit I bit his lower lip moaning. What the



hell was I doing? I quickly got off him then I fixed myself.

Me: I'm sorry I can't do this. This was a huge mistake

I headed out of the room. I looked for Siyavuya. I wanted to go home. I found him still outside.

Me: I wanna go home

He didn't say anything. We headed to his car. He drove off without music playing just our breaths were speaking. He pulled over at my house I thanked him as I headed inside the house. I found Aqhamile talking with the guy I don't know. I headed upstairs to my room then I threw myself in bed sighing loudly. What the hell just happened? Why did I allow him? Ohh God Siyavuya won't forgive me at all.

## ELEVEN

I couldn't sleep without talking to Siyavuya. I had to talk to him. I took off my heels then I wore my AF1. I also wore a hoodie then I headed downstairs. I found Aqhamile still with the guy watching TV. He looked at me smiling.

Aqhamile: you're back early

Me: please drive me at Siyavuya's house. I did something terrible and I want to apologize to him

Aqhamile: what did you do?

I sighed as my eyes started burning.

Me: please drive me there

Aqhamile: I'll be back and don't do anything stupid. Don't let anyone inside here otherwise I'll kill you and I mean it

We walked out of the house. We got in his car then he drove off to Siyavuya's house.

Aqhamile: what happened?

Me: so I was busy talking with Banele then I told him I wanted to be with my boyfriend who knows I might get fucked because it has been 8 years not getting anything. He said that they're dildos you know that and I touched his dick then told him I wanted a real thing then I looked for Siyavuya. I found him seated outside. I asked him if he was okay. He said how can I be okay when my own fucking girlfriend touched someone else's dick like really Simyolisiwe. I don't know why I responded and said I didn't know it was going to be a big deal, it ain't like there's a relationship I share with him. He said ohh please fuck you. I understand

he was mad but he shouldn't have said fuck me. I said to him fuck me? Really Siyavuya? Fuck you too, what the fuck. I left him outside then headed back inside the house. I went to one of the rooms then I washed my face. When I got back I found Banele seated on the bed. I apologized to him. He was okay and he apologized. I asked him why then he told me that he saw. I asked him if I did that would he get mad. He agreed. I don't know but I think me saying fuck him made us kiss each other. Like I really fucked up. I don't know why but Siyavuya won't forgive me

Aqhamile: I wouldn't forgive you too. I mean what the hell were you thinking? You know that there's going to be a war. If Banele won't trouble you, you'll be safe but

if he does you're in deep trouble. Banele will make it a point that he gets you and then you become his. Let just hope it won't be that way and I won't help you in that. You knew very well that you had a partner in the party but no you became a whore and kissed someone you shouldn't have

Me: don't call me a whore. I'm not a whore. I know what I did was wrong but don't fucking call me a whore please

Aqhamile: if you didn't kiss Banele I wouldn't be calling you that but you are a whore

Me: you're seriously not helping you're making things hard for me

Aqhamile: if he breaks up with you just know I'll be there for you

Me: Aqhamile just shut up

Aqhamile: I love you so much sweetie pie

I clicked my tongue looking at him. He pouted looking at me. I shook my head. Honestly speaking if Siyavuya end things with me. I will be sad. I mean I bought this to myself. I honestly don't want to lose him and I just hope Banele won't be nagging me as Aqhamile said. I mean anything is possible he might do it and he might not. I just don't know but I don't want any of that. I just don't want drama at this point.

Aqhamile got at Siyavuya's house.

Me: please go. I will call you if something is wrong or you should fetch me

Aqhamile: okay I love you

Me: I love you too

He kissed my forehead then I walked out of the car. Aqhamile drove off. I headed to the house. I knocked on the door. I waited for few seconds then the door got opened.

Siyavuya sighed looking at me.

Siyavuya: get inside

I got inside then headed to the lounge.

Siyavuya pulled me upstairs. We headed to his room. I sat on the bed and so did he.

Me: look baby I'm so sorry for what I did. I shouldn't have touched him knowing very well that I came with you to the party

Siyavuya: it's fine just don't do it again

Me: something happened again when I went back inside the house

Siyavuya: what happened?

He asked looking at me as he stood up. I sighed looking at my hands.

Siyavuya: no look at me

Tears streamed down my face.

Me: I'm so sorry. I'm really sorry

Siyavuya: I said it's fine

Me: please don't interrupt me. Banele kissed me and I kissed him back. I regret kissing him back. I should have stopped him but I didn't do so early. I'm really sorry I kissed him back baby. Please forgive me

He wiped my tears then hugged me. He looked at me.

Siyavuya: you kissed him back?

Me: it was a mistake

He chuckled looking at me.



Siyavuya: okay. Are you sleeping over or should I drive you back to your house?

Me: I don't know

Siyavuya: you're sleeping here. Take a shower. You even smell like him

Me: but I...

He interrupted me.

Siyavuya: can we not do this right now?

Please. You know I can break us off right now. Please don't make me mad

I nodded looking at him. He walked out of the room. I took off my clothes then I headed to the en-suite. I took a quick shower then I headed back to the room naked. Siyavuya was seated on the bed. I applied lotion on my body then I wore Siyavuya's oversized t-shirt. I sat on top of

Siyavuya then I wrapped my hands around his neck as he was busy with his phone. My legs were wrapped around his waist.

Siyavuya: baby I'm busy here

Me: what can I do for you to forgive me?

Siyavuya: are you seriously asking me that?

I nodded looking at him. I gave him a peck.

Siyavuya: no like are you serious?

He asked as he walked his hand to my pussy. I nodded looking at him. He rubbed my clit giving me a peck. I helped him take off his vest. We shared a passionate kiss with me moaning softly. Siyavuya laid me nicely on the bed then he took off my oversized t-shirt. He got on top of me then we shared a passionate kiss. I arched my back as he inserted his two fingers.

Me: ohh God

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: I won't hurt you

Me: it seems like you forgot it has been years not having sex

Siyavuya: you will be fine

Me: baby...

He increased his pace rubbing my clit.

Me: ohh God. I was... still talking

He smashed his lips on mine stopping me from talking. We shared a passionate kiss. I felt like something was definitely going to happen. Siyavuya went on his knees then he buried his head on my pussy. I felt his tongue on my clit. I moaned touching his hair. I was so very wet. He finger fucked me fast while licking my clit very fast. I arched

my back as I felt like I'm about to squirm. I started vibrating as he increased his pace more. I squirm on Siyavuya's face. He licked me clean then he came up to me. We shared a passionate kiss. He got away from me then he took off his boxer brief. He got on top of me then he looked at me as he positioned himself onto me. I flinched in pain as Siyavuya was about to push himself onto me.

Siyavuya: baby

I looked at him smiling. He gave me a peck.

Siyavuya: I want you to look at me okay?

I nodded looking at him. He rubbed my clit then he forced himself onto me. I let out a scream. He stopped what he was doing. I pulled him to go further and he did then he

started moving slowly. I moaned softly looking at him.

Siyavuya: you know what you did right?

I nodded looking at him moaning softly.

Siyavuya: so I'm gonna punish you and then you're going to learn to not do that shit ever again you hear me?

Me: yesss

I said as he hit my g-spot.

Siyavuya: I love you okay?

Me: I... love you too

He started increasing his pace. I moaned softly as I held grab held his biceps. I sure do deserve this. I bought this to myself. This was amazing. I don't want to lie but at the same time it was painful mixed with pleasure. He was doing me so hard and very

fast. When I try to touch him he removes my hands. I have never felt this way. It surely has been years not making love to anyone.

.

I was woken up by my phone ringing. I sighed sitting up straight. I looked at the caller ID. It was Aqhamile. I answered the phone tired as hell. Siyavuya held my waist tightly. I shook my head smiling.

Me: what is it?

Aqhamile: did I wake you up? I'm so sorry

Me: it's fine. I'm just tired

Aqhamile: ohh no don't tell me you did it

Me: Aqhamile please shut up

He screamed girly over the phone. I laughed shaking my head. This was so funny.

Aqhamile: after so many years

Me: I wasn't in a relationship you seem to forget

Aqhamile: well yeah but how was it?

Me: fuck no I won't tell you

Aqhamile: okay then

Me: what's wrong?

Aqhamile: I'm leaving

Me: you can leave it's fine

Aqhamile: I love you okay?

Me: I love you more

Aqhamile: we'll talk later on girlfriend

Me: bye baby

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I laid back on the bed.

Siyavuya: who was that?

Me: it was Aqhamile

Siyavuya: let's sleep baby. Are you okay though?

Me: I am fine you don't have to be worried baby

Siyavuya: okay then let's sleep

I slept on his chest. He squeezed me then gave me a peck. I smiled shaking my head as we both slept together. I mean we were having sex for hours and my pussy is burning but then it was worth it. I just love everything. I also love how things has actually turned out to be.



## TWELVE

I was woken up by my bladder full. I quickly ran to the en-suite. I did my business then I washed my hands. I washed my face then I wiped it. I went back to the room and I found Siyavuya holding the white sheet. It had blood on it. I looked at Siyavuya. He just shook his head smiling. He came to me.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

Me: I didn't know that I was going to bleed.  
This is so embarrassing

Siyavuya: what the fuck? Baby this isn't embarrassing it's completely normal for it to be to this way okay?

I sighed looking at him.

Me: okay

Siyavuya: you know that I love you right?

I giggled looking at him.

Me: I know baby

Siyavuya: go back in there and take a shower I will make the bed then I will have to call my maid to wash the sheet. I won't be able to do it because I can't wash thoroughly so

Me: I will wash it don't worry

Siyavuya: no you're not going to do that. Go and take a shower please

Me: okay I will do that sir

Siyavuya: thank you

He gave me a peck. I smiled heading back to the en-suite. I got in the shower then I washed my body busy singing. I don't want to lie I'm so happy that Siyavuya forgave me. Honestly speaking I thought he wasn't

going to forgive me. I mean the things I did would have cost us being together anymore. I'm just happy things are back to the way they were before. I got out off the shower. I dry up my body then I brushed my teeth. I headed back to the room. I applied lotion on my body. I wore Siyavuya's shirt with sleepers then I headed downstairs. I found Siyavuya talking with someone. I guess that's his maid. The maid looked at me.

Her: hey mam

Siyavuya turned to look at me.

Me: hey baby I'm hungry

Siyavuya: go to the lounge I will join you just now

Me: okay

I headed to the lounge then I tuned into Ouija. It is a horror movie. My phone rang disturbing my movie section. I sighed looking at the caller ID. It was an unknown number. I answered the phone wondering who it is and where the hell they got my number.

Me: hello

Voice: look I did what you told me to do and your siblings said that they will pay me back I nodded knowing very well that it is Banele. I shouldn't be surprised that he has gotten hold of my number. I mean he is a gangster.

Banele: did you hear me?

Me: yes I heard you very well

Banele: they told me something disturbing

Me: ohh really? Now you're best friends?  
What did they say?

Banele: they regret what they did to you  
when you came home pregnant

Me: I won't fall for that. Those two were  
already trying to rob me likely I knew  
something had to be done. You know when  
they came here with my parents. I thought  
all of them were really sorry but clearly I  
was wrong they weren't sorry. They just  
want what I have and I'm sorry but I won't  
be able to give them what they want. I  
won't and I'm stuck in that. I won't change  
my mind in that. I was perfectly fine  
without them and I will still be. I have been  
all by myself for the whole 7 years

Banele: I hear you clearly Simyolisiwe. Look  
I want to apologize for yesterday. I

shouldn't have kissed you knowing very well that you came with your man. I'm really sorry

I chuckled not believing that he's apologizing to me.

Me: it's fine I forgive you and I'm also sorry for touching you and kissing you back

Banele: it's fine. We're cool right?

Me: yes and I hope you won't trouble me because I'm not going anywhere

Banele: ohh please I won't do that. I'm not that type of person I've changed

Me: if you say so Banele

He chuckled.

Banele: friends?

Me: with me?

Banele: yeah is there a problem?

Me: ohh no just that I'm surprised but then we can be friends

Banele: let me leave you be then

Me: thank you and have a nice day

Banele: same applies

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I shook my head smiling not believing what just happened. I'm really glad he said it himself that he won't trouble me. I was so sure he was going to do that but then I'm glad he didn't. I pressed play then continued watching the movie. Siyavuya came with my food. I had it while watching the movie. I watched it until it was over. Siyavuya sat on the coffee table then opened my legs and pulled me closer to

him. I wrapped my hands on his neck then gave him a peck. He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: I have to go to work so I have to drive you back to your house. You're going to your house wearing like that or?

Me: the shirt yes but not the shoes. I will wear my AF1 then take my clothes that's all

Siyavuya: okay I'm going to take a shower. When I'm done we're going okay?

I nodded looking. He gave me a peck then headed upstairs. I chose another movie which is The Nun. It's also a horror movie. I watched the movie and it was pretty scary. When the movie ended Siyavuya came downstairs looking sexy in his suit with my belongings. He gave me my shoes and I wore them then we headed out of the



house to his car. He drove off to my house with music playing.

Me: how old is your maid? She looks very young

Siyavuya: she's 18

Me: what? Baby she's young? What if she tries something with you?

Siyavuya: I will obviously fire her. I told her and she understood

Me: I just don't feel good about this

Siyavuya: baby everything will be fine you don't need to be worried

He held my hand. I looked at him.

Siyavuya: baby okay?

Me: I don't know. I guess I should trust you in this

Siyavuya: baby

I just smiled looking at him. He sighed driving. He got at my house after some time. I took my belongings then got out of the car. I waved at Siyavuya then I made my way to the house. I punched in the code then got inside the house. My phone rang as I headed to the kitchen. I poured myself a glass of wine then I gulped it down. I looked at the caller ID. It was Precious. This girl of mine literally just chose her boyfriend over me. Like it has been way too long we haven't talked about anything at all. And I have to say I miss her so bad. I miss my best friend. I answered the phone pouring the wine again on my glass.

Precious: girlfriend

Me: what can I do for you stranger?

Precious: uhmm wow okay babes. I'm so sorry that I have been a jerk. I'm sorry I have been a bad friend to you actually best friend just that I found out something

Me: what is it?

Precious: promise me you won't get mad at me?

Me: just tell me already

Precious: I'm three months pregnant

I laughed. Precious hates kids but except my baby obvious. She always told me she won't have a kid because she won't be able to handle them. So now her telling me she's pregnant makes me laugh. I just don't seem to believe it at all.

Me: you're lying right?

Precious: why would I lie about this? I'm serious dude I'm pregnant. Actually check your WhatsApp but don't disconnect the call

Me: okay

I went through my phone then opened my WhatsApp. She had sent me her picture holding her tummy and it was visible a little bit. Her scans not to mention the pregnancy test. I couldn't believe it. This was just all new and amazing.

Me: wow

Precious: you see? I am

Me: I thought...

She interrupted me.

Precious: I know but I'm pregnant and I'm keeping the baby

Me: you just made me remember  
something thank you

I quickly headed upstairs to my room. I got there then headed to the en-suite. I took a birth control pill. I couldn't risk getting pregnant. I gulped it down with a glass of water then I went back to my room. I laid on my bed.

Me: I'm back

Precious: what were you going to do?

Me: taking a pill

Precious: why?

Me: I don't want to be pregnant as yet

Precious: you had sex? Ohh God

Me: yes I did. It was painful though because I was also punished for what I did

Precious: you know I love to gossip we can get back to talking about my pregnancy later on but now tell me something I don't know. Since when are you in a fucking relationship young lady?

Me: it has been two months but yes yesterday I was at this party where my so called siblings invited me at

Precious: you're still in contact with them?

Me: hell no they came to my house

Precious: okay continue

Me: well let me just say what is it that I did. So I happened to touch this other guy's dick then I looked for my boyfriend. I found him seated outside. So I asked him is he okay. Well technically he saw me and we fought. I got mad and obviously cursed at him then

obviously with the same guy we kissed and he was touchy. I stopped things from getting further then I told him it was a mistake. So yes I got punished because of what I did. I honestly thought my second time having sex would be nice and whatsoever. I'm not saying I didn't enjoy it well I did but I'm still in pain

Precious: I would have dumped you

Me: Aqhamile said the same thing yesterday

Precious: ohh God you saw him yesterday?

Me: yes I did. He's so handsome

Precious: if I wasn't pregnant with my man's baby I would have shot my shot on that dude because he's so handsome

Me: obviously he is handsome

Precious: I know and I missed him

Me: give him a call and tell him the good news

Precious: he's gonna be happy that I'm pregnant I know for sure

Me: of course. Are you okay though?

Precious: yes I am. I'm not complaining. I might come and see you probably after few months. I don't know when but I will come

Me: I will be here surely

Precious: I have to go. We will talk surely later on

Me: okay bye

Precious: bye girl

She disconnected the phone after saying that. A door knock interrupted me from



resting my eyes. I sighed heading downstairs. I walked to the door. I opened the door and I was attacked by a hug. I giggled hugging my daughter. I gave her a peck.

Mandisa: I missed you so much mommy

Me: I missed you too baby

Her eyes were red indicating the fact that she was crying. Something has happened. I just don't know what is it. Every time my baby comes back she hugs me then goes to her room. But something's definitely wrong. I looked at Melusi's son.

Me: what happened to my daughter?

Musa: I don't know mam

Me: baby what's wrong?

Tears streamed down her face. I looked at Musa. I will have to get to the bottom of this. Something has been done to her and I can sense it. She's in pain. I just wonder what has been done to her.

Me: you can leave thank you

Musa: I will see you Friday Mandisa

She didn't say anything. Musa walked out of the house. I locked the door then I knelt in front of my daughter.

Me: baby you can tell me as you can see we're both together. Tell me what's wrong. I don't like seeing you like this

Mandisa: he said he's going to kill me if I say anything

Me: who said that? Mandisa I'm your mother you should tell me anything. I mean

anything so please talk to me. This person isn't here. He won't do anything to you. You won't get killed

Mandisa: it hurts so bad mom

Me: what do you mean it hurts?

I asked her alarmed. Something in me told me that I should take her pants down and I did just that. I pulled her panties down she was bleeding. She was bleeding from her vagina. Tears streamed down my face. Ohh my God what has been done to my daughter.

Me: baby I'm so sorry. I'm so sorry I wasn't there. Ohh God but you have to tell me who did this to you. I can't be sending you over to your father's house then you come back like this now tell me who did that to you

Mandisa: it was Bhut' Musa

- It was brother Musa

Me: ohh God

I quickly made her wear back her panties and trouser.

Me: I'm coming back stay here

Mandisa: okay

She wiped her tears. I quickly ran to my room. I wore my sweat pants then I went back downstairs. I took the car keys and my phone then went to my daughter.

Me: baby we're going to the hospital okay?

She nodded looking at me. We headed out of the house then got in my car. I drove off to the hospital. My daughter was crying silently in front of me. This isn't what I needed especially on this day. I wasn't

going to let this go away. I just don't understand how could Musa do something like this to my daughter. She's just 7 years. She's very young. Why would he rape my daughter? I just don't understand what did my daughter do. I honestly thought me having to send Mandisa to Melusi's house was better than having for him to spend days at my house. I just never thought Musa would do this her. I mean he's way too old to be touching my daughter. He is Mandisa's big brother. He's 20 years for goodness sake. I got at the hospital after some time. I wiped my tears and also my daughter's tears then we made our way inside. I went to my doctor's office. I found her with her husband. She looked at me astonished.

Her: please excuses us baby

Her husband walked out of the office. He closed the door. Zinhle hugged me. Tears streamed down on my face.

Zinhle: what's wrong?

Me: my daughter just came back from Melusi's house and Melusi's son brought him up to me. My daughter cried silently looking at me. I knew something was wrong so Musa left. I asked her what's wrong because I could see she couldn't saying anything next to Musa. She told me that this person will kill her. I told her she won't be killed because she was with me. She said that it hurts so bad and I asked what do you mean it hurts. I knew something was wrong. I don't know but I checked her and she was bleeding through her vagina

Zinhle: she was raped?

I nodded.

Zinhle: why would he rape her?

Me: I don't know. I knew better than not taking action onto this. Please do the rape kit then call the police please

Zinhle: I will definitely do that. Baby come here

She carried her and made her lay on the bed. She took off her trouser and panties then did the rape kit. She got done after some time. She called the police. I sat next to my daughter. She looked at me.

Mandisa: I'm hungry

Me: don't worry when we get done here we will leave

Mandisa: okay

Me: has Musa ever tried anything to you before he raped you?

Mandisa: yes he did

Me: what did he do?

Mandisa: he always touched my vagina especially when I'm taking a bath and when I will be sleeping

Me: why didn't you tell me earlier?

Mandisa: he said that he was going to kill me

Me: you should have told me

Mandisa: I'm sorry

Me: I just wished you told me earlier. You won't be going back to your father's house anymore

Mandisa: but mom...



I interrupted her.

Me: if I didn't send you there your so called step brother wouldn't have raped you. You're not going there anymore. I was supposed to protect you. Where did he rape you?

Mandisa: on some side of the road

Me: so your father doesn't know?

She shook her head. Zinhle came back with a police officer. My daughter hid herself.

Zinhle: he won't do anything to you

Me: baby it's fine I'm here

She sighed looking at me.

Him: hey mam

Me: hey

Him: Zinhle has briefed me about what happened to your daughter but I need her to tell me how it happened if it's okay with you

Me: I'm fine with it. Baby I want you to tell the man here what happened between you and your brother okay?

Mandisa: I can't say anything. I told you that he's going to kill me

Me: he won't do that. I told you that I will protect you

Mandisa: no

Me: Mandisa

Mandisa: mama no! I won't talk!

I looked at her surprised. I just couldn't believe that she talked to me like that.

Him: it's fine but you mentioned that this person is her brother right?

Me: yes half brother

Him: I will get to the bottom of this. I might come to your house in few hours. At least I have the rape kit and the results this is going to be easy for us to catch this person

Me: thank you

I gave him my numbers so he can call me back. He headed out. Zinhle cleaned up my daughter. She gave us some medicine for her. We walked out then I drove back to my house. We got there after some time. I made something for the both of us to eat.

## THIRTEEN

I was making dinner for both me and my daughter. My daughter was sleeping. We haven't shared a conversation after what happened at the hospital. I don't know how to feel about this. I'm just hurt that my daughter got raped. I don't want to lie it just doesn't make me happy at all. At some time point I can't trust anyone with my daughter. I never thought Musa would be so heartless. He should have been protective against my daughter. He should have been a bigger brother to her. I just never thought he would want to be intimate with my daughter. I wonder if I didn't notice early how things would have been. My phone rang disturbing me from cooking. I sighed wiping my wet hands. I

checked the caller ID. It was an unknown number. I answered the phone sighing.

Voice: hey it's the police from earlier but please call me Glen

Me: okay

Glen: can you please send me the location to the house where the boys stays at?

Me: I can take you there. I will send you my location then we will get to go

Glen: are you sure?

Me: yes I am

Glen: okay

He disconnected the phone after saying that. I sent him my location. I switched off the stove then I headed upstairs to my daughter's room. I found her watching a

movie on her laptop. I sat on the bed. She paused the movie then looked at me.

Me: are you okay? I thought you would be still sleeping

Mandisa: I couldn't sleep. I'm in severe pain

Me: should I give you the pills?

Mandisa: I have to eat first

Me: should I make you anything to eat?

Mandisa: I will have something later on.

Mom look I'm sorry for the way I spoke to you. I shouldn't have done what I did. Just that I'm scared

Me: I'm here you don't have to be worried. I will protect you

Mandisa: are you serious?

Me: I'm your mother of course I will

Mandisa: thank you

Me: it's nothing baby. Look the police officer from earlier will come now so I want you to wear your clothes. We're going to get your brother arrested. You will stay in the car okay?

Mandisa: okay mom

Me: come down already

She shook her head smiling. I walked out of her room. I headed downstairs. A door knock came on the door. I quickly ran to the door. I opened the door. It was Glen. I let him inside.

Glen: hello again

Me: hey, we're just waiting for my daughter to come down

Glen: you have a beautiful house

Me: thank you so much

Mandisa came downstairs. I took my car keys and phone then headed out of the house. I got in my car with my daughter then drove off. Glen followed me behind with his police van. My daughter was watching a movie on my phone. I got at Melusi's house after some time. I saw his car outside.

Me: I will be back okay?

Mandisa: yes

Me: don't forget to lock the doors okay?

Mandisa: yes mom

I kissed her forehead then I got out of the car. She immediately locked the door. I made my way to the house with Glen. The other police officer waited outside. I got



inside the house and I didn't even bother knocking on the door. I found everyone seated at the lounge. I walked up to Musa. I punched him on his face. He groaned in pain.

Melusi: Simyolisiwe what the hell are you doing?

Me: please shut up

I looked at Musa. He was bleeding.

Me: you know I can hurt you so bad right now for what you did. Who gives you the right to fucking touch my daughter? You weren't supposed to touch her. You're 20 dude. You could have went and got other girls to fucking put that little dick of yours into their vaginas and you fucking chose to rape my daughter. Are you fucking kidding me? Why did you do that?

Musa: I didn't do anything to her  
I punched him again.

Me: don't fucking make me mad. Should I  
go and fetch her right now?

Melusi: what's happening here?

Me: your precious son raped his little sister  
and he's going to jail

Thandeka: ayy sisi how sure are you that  
your daughter is honest about what she  
said?

Me: are trying to say my daughter is a liar?

Thandeka don't say that. You didn't see the  
state she was in

Thandeka: your child left here okay and  
now you come back here and tell us bullshit  
I chuckled looking at her.

Me: my daughter was fucking bleeding from her vagina and you know what that means. You were also raped? Why are trying to protect your son? Your son is going to jail and that's final. I hope he rots in there

Thandeka: my son is not going there

Me: can you please do the honours

Glen walked up to Musa. He hand cuffed him then walked away with him.

Me: my daughter is no longer coming here. If you want to see her you will come to my house

Melusi: Simyolisiwe

Me: just focus on your family and leave me alone. You couldn't protect your own fucking daughter

Melusi: you can't talk to me like that

Me: I'm not your wife. I will talk to you the way I want. Since when does Musa bring my child to my house? I thought you do all of that. I'm just glad I saw things early otherwise things would have been worse. What's even worse is that your son has been busy touching her. He knew since they were alone let me just taste the vagina of my sister and see how it is going to be like. I fucking hate that you didn't teach your son what is right and what is wrong. I guess it runs in the family because you also had sex with me while I was drunk but I won't say anything

I wiped my tears then I walked out. Melusi stopped me as I was outside of the house.

Me: please don't make this bad already

Melusi: I'm so sorry

Me: if you want to see your daughter you will call me right now I have to go

Melusi: Simyolisiwe

I just walked to my car. I got in the car then I drove back to my house.

Mandisa: I saw Bhut' Musa being taken away. Is he going away forever? I don't want him to hurt me anymore. I don't want him to put his long thing on my mouth

Me: you didn't tell me that ohh God baby. He is going away. He won't hurt you anymore. We're going to do this together with or without your father okay?

Mandisa: what about your boyfriend?

Me: you mean Siyavuya?

Mandisa: yes him. It has been long I've last seen him where is he?

Me: he's at work. I was with him yesterday

Mandisa: I want to see him

Me: he will come at the house later on  
okay?

Mandisa: yes, I can't wait to see him

She said that excitedly. I love seeing her smiling like this. It was just beautiful having to watch her smile after what happened to her. I got a call from Glen as I got at my house. I answered the phone heading inside the house.

Me: hey

Glen: you hurt the kid you know that?

Me: he will be fine. He is just few years younger than me. He will be strong

Glen: I will tell you when is the court day  
okay?

Me: okay I will hear from you

Glen: have a nice day. I hope your daughter  
heals

Me: she will don't worry

Glen: good bye

Me: bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I headed to the kitchen then I continued cooking with music playing. I just wanted to distract my mind from what has anticipated earlier that's all. I got done cooking after some time. A knock came on the door. I went to see who it was. It was Siyavuya. I smiled looking at him. We shared a hug. I held in my tears. Mandisa walked down the stairs. She looked at me as she saw Siyavuya. I shook my head smiling as she

ran up to him. Siyavuya caught her and gave her a hug.

Mandisa: I missed you

Siyavuya: I missed you too baby girl. You look so beautiful

Mandisa: thank you. Mom has cooked are you staying over?

Siyavuya: well I...

My daughter interrupted him.

Mandisa: please it would really make me happy if you stay

Siyavuya looked at me smiling.

Me: please baby

Siyavuya: okay I will stay

Mandisa: well I have so much to tell you about the past few days



I shook my head smiling as they headed to the lounge. I dished up for all of us then I gave them their food. We had our food with my daughter talking with Siyavuya. I guess Siyavuya does make my daughter happy. I loved what I was seeing.

- .
- .
- .

FEW WEEKS LATER...

Judge: order in court

Everyone kept quiet. The judge went through his documents then looked over at us.

Judge: I have the Role of the Accredited Health Care Practitioner. Duties of Accredited Health Care practitioner which

were held by Dr Zinhle Khumalo. Dr Khumalo made it a point that she calls the officer because she was told to do so because of what happened to the young girl. She explained everything that has been said to her by the mother. The duties of the accredited health care practitioner to the victim has been made. The Responsibility of Accredited Health Care practitioner – Dr Khumalo took certain samples from the victim. The investigating officer which was Glen Magumela ensured that correct samples are taken and the samples are clearly marked. Medical procedure – It must be explained to the victim that the purpose of the examination is to collect medico-legal evidence. Dr Khumalo provided medical treatment to the child. Bathing or washing –

the mother of the child somehow didn't temper with the evidence. She brought it upon herself that she brings her child to Dr Khumalo so that they can examine her and take the rape kit. Once the examination has been completed, the victim has been cleaned by the Doctor then she went back home. Referral to counselling services – A list of all organisations in the area offering counselling must be kept in every charge office and the victim must be informed that counselling services are available. Establish who is available in the area to render this service, eg 'Rape Crisis' and 'Life Line'. Help victim to get counselling – Although it remains the task of the police to investigate crime, an attempt must be made, without losing objectivity and as far as practically

possible, to assist the victim throughout. The choice about choosing an organisation remains the victims'. The police will offer assistance in this regard and Glen did do that. In the case of children, refer to the CPU or a specialist for the procedures that must be followed. She didn't need much of a counselling. Keep the victim informed – The child has been informed of the progress of the case (e.g bail proceedings, court hearings). Even they did not have any positive progress to report, the child will feel reassured that their case has not been 'forgotten' especially the mother of the child if regular reports are made to them. Prepare the victim for court – Although the child must not be told what to say, it is the officer's duty to put the child at ease by

explaining court procedures even though she's young. Steps have been taken to ensure that the court process is as untraumatic as possible for the child. And we all know what are the steps I won't say them. What's amazing is that she was able to follow them thoroughly so with her mother by her side. The child sees the reporters in court and it didn't distress her. The victim particulars will not be published unless authorised by the magistrate. (See section 335A of the Criminal Procedure Act.) A child is always protected in this regard. It is the duty of the police to inform the victim about the possibility of delays in the court proceedings, and to encourage them to persist with the case. Pre-trial impact statement – A further statement

from the child have been obtained. What she said was evident. I won't go in detail about it. SAP 62 – Whenever a sentence of 2 years or longer is imposed by the court, a SAP 62 form must be completed in triplicate. The importance of the detailed completion of this form cannot be emphasised enough. The Parole Board relies heavily on the investigating officer's input in this regard when determining possible parole. The Act states that first-time rape offenders (without any aggravating factors) will receive a minimum sentence of 10 years. Second offenders will receive a minimum of 15 years, with that number increasing to 25 years for third offenders. I hereby sentence you to 10 years in jail without parole

Everyone cheered. I smiled looking at my daughter. She looked at me confused.

Mandisa: what does that mean?

Me: it means that you won't get hurt ever again until he comes out when you're old enough

Mandisa: I will 17 by then?

Me: yes you will be. Let's go baby and celebrate

Mandisa: can I go to hug the judge first?

Me: okay I will be waiting here

She ran to the judge. They have been pretty close the past few weeks. Aqhamile smiled looking at me.

Aqhamile: ohh my super mom

Me: ohh please

Aqhamile: how do you feel?

Me: I'm happy I mean he won't do anything to my daughter anymore

Aqhamile: I just wish he got 25 years in here

Me: just as the judge said the first time rape offenders will receive a minimum of 10 years so we won't say anything nor do anything about it

Aqhamile: I hear you girl

Mandisa came back to me.

Mandisa: hey

Aqhamile: hey and bye

Me: bye

I walked out of the court then headed to the car. My name got called out.

Me: get in the car



It was Melusi. He looked at me smiling.

Melusi: I'm sorry

Me: no it's fine. You don't need to apologize

Melusi: can I come see her tomorrow?

Me: of course you can

Melusi: I guess this is it

Me: yes it is

Melusi: let me leave you be

Me: okay bye

He waved at my daughter then walked away. I got in the car then drove off to Siyavuya's house. He wanted us to come and be with him. He couldn't come because he's sick. I left him on the bed. We got at his house after some time. We made our way inside. I found him at the kitchen.

Me: really?

Siyavuya: I wanted to make us something so we can celebrate our daughter winning the case

Me: you're even walking barefoot

Siyavuya: I will be fine baby

He gave me a peck.

Siyavuya: take your ice cream

Mandisa went to the fridge and took it. She walked to the lounge after doing that. I sat on the kitchen counter.

Siyavuya: I saw everything

Me: of course. I'm glad everything is okay now

He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: I love you okay?

Me: I know you do

He gave me a peck then I watched him as he continued to cook. I was glad everything went accordingly so. The only thing I will focus on right now is my daughter, my man and my business and that's all. I don't want negativity following my way. I don't need that now or whenever.

## FOURTEEN

FEW WEEKS LATER...

Mandisa: mama tata yaphone.a!

- Mom dad is calling

She shouted from the lounge.

Me: phendule ndbusy apha mna!

- Answer it I'm busy here

Mandisa: okay

Siyavuya shook his head looking at him. I

shrugged my shoulders looking at him.

Me: what is it?

Siyavuya: are you still ignoring him?

Me: I seriously don't want anything to do with him. I'm just fine with him shame

Siyavuya: he's not at fault though

Me: ohh please he also did the same thing to me years ago and now look Mandisa is here. He didn't tell me what happened he just said we had sex. How we did it I don't know. I just feel like something was wrong. Maybe I was drugged then yes but we would never know. I mean it was years ago. We're going to let this go I guess

He sighed looking at me. Mandisa came to the kitchen.

Mandisa: dad says he wants to see me

Me: he mentioned that yesterday. We have to go home. Are you coming?

Siyavuya: I will come by later on

Me: okay

I gave him a peck then I took my car keys and my phone.

Siyavuya: I love you girls

Mandisa: we love you too

I shook my head smiling. We walked out of the house then headed to the car. I drove off to my house with music playing while my daughter just played games on my phone. My daughter has been doing good the past few weeks. I love how she is now. I just hated what happened to her last month but I'm glad Musa got arrested and now he will be facing years in there. I just hope when he comes out few years later he won't try anything to my daughter because consequences are going to be done. After all a protection order against him will be done. I mean my daughter won't remember much when she grows up. I mean right now she's just young. I just hope she won't have

a memory of what happened to her but if she does I know I will have to tell her what happened to her and I will tell her.

Mandisa: mom look dad is home

Me: I see him

I parked my car then walked out with my daughter. She ran to her father.

Melusi: hey Siwe

Me: hey Melusi

I walked inside the house. Melusi followed me inside carrying Mandisa. I walked to the kitchen. I poured myself a glass of wine. I gulped it down then I joined the others on the lounge.

Mandisa: mom

Me: what is it?

Mandisa: daddy wants to take me out tomorrow for shopping

Me: no

Mandisa: but mom...

I interrupted her.

Me: can I talk to your father please?

Mandisa: okay

She walked away leaving me with Melusi. I looked at Melusi.

Melusi: please I have missed her

Me: if I can tag along it's fine but I can't leave you alone with her. I just can't seem to do it

Melusi: it's fine we can go. I will come tomorrow morning if that's okay with you

Me: no it's fine



Melusi: okay let me leave you both. I have to be somewhere

Me: okay we will see you tomorrow

Melusi: tomorrow it is

I nodded looking at him. Mandisa came downstairs. She ran to Melusi. She hugged him then accompanied to the door. She came back already excited. I guess Melusi already told her what's happening tomorrow. She ran up to me smiling. I shook my head smiling.

Mandisa: thank you so much mom

Me: okay it's fine baby

She was hugging me tight.

Me: you can let go now

She screamed running upstairs to her room. This was so beautiful to witness.

Me: Mandisa what do you want to eat for dinner?

I shouted realizing that I should make dinner since Siyavuya will be coming over. Mandisa appeared from the stairs.

Mandisa: I don't know pizza will do. I know you must be tired and I'm also craving for it. I mean it has been long I've last had it

Me: okay we will have pizza then

She walked back to her room. My phone rang as I took the bottle of wine to the lounge. I looked at the caller ID. It was Banele. I shook my head answering the phone. I poured myself a glass of wine.

Me: Banele Khoza what can I do for you?

He laughed over the phone. I chuckled taking a sip of my wine.

Banele: seems like you don't want me to call you what's wrong?

Me: nothing's wrong. Just that I'm so tired especially with the court thing yesterday you see?

Banele: ohh yes I get you. What's nice is that everything went very well. You won't have to be worried about him anymore

Me: I know but when he comes out he will be 30 don't you think he's going to try anything on my baby?

Banele: he would have learnt his lesson so no he won't. If he does try anything why don't you just do a protection order against him?

Me: I will do when he does try anything

Banele: you're good though?

Me: yes I am. How about you?

Banele: I'm doing good. Well your siblings are doing what is expected of them

Me: that's really amazing

Banele: yes it is but I sometimes feel sorry for them

Me: a whole you? Banele Khoza thee Ace feeling sorry for my siblings? Wow that's new. I don't know you this way not that I do but you know what I'm trying to say to you He chuckled. I shook my head smiling.

Me: it must be the wine I'm having

Banele: ohh no it's fine I get you. You know I have a good heart right?

Me: how would I know that because I don't know you that much

Banele: well I do have a good heart and you should know that

Me: if so then can you buy me a Range Rover?

Banele: you will get it in two months time

Me: we will see about that in December

Banele: you really don't trust me?

Me: ohh please I don't obviously

Banele: I will prove you wrong then

I shook my head smiling.

Banele: well I know you don't know me that well as you said but then there's this girl I want but the problem with her is that she's afraid of me

Me: you're in love?

Banele: well let me just say yes

Me: how long have you known her?

Banele: ever since I could remember

Me: since she started working for you just say it

Banele: well yes

Me: why is she afraid of you?

Banele: well since you know that I'm business man then on the other side I'm a gangster the girl witnessed me killing someone at my building. I thought I was alone with some of the people I work with but hell no I was wrong the girl was inside the building she didn't go home. When she witnessed all that she ran to her office obviously I did what anyone would have done. I went to her office then threatened her and also what I will do to her family.

She has been afraid of me ever since. She already saw me killing three other people and she's still scared of me. The way she's scared of me yhoo Mandisa's mother and funi uxoka iyadika. I can't even touch her heee

- I don't want to lie it's irritating

I laughed. He clicked his tongue chuckling. What the hell did he expect? Banele is surely crazy. I don't want to lie.

Me: you made her to be scared of you. You shouldn't have threatened her at the first place

Banele: she was going to get me arrested

Me: you have money dude

Banele: fuck you

I laughed. He clicked his tongue.

Me: you need my help right?

Banele: obviously I do

Me: give me her numbers then I will give a call but we're going to have to become friends

Banele: she doesn't have friends you're lucky

Me: that's settled. I'll come by your office tomorrow after the shopping with my daughter and her father

Banele: you're going shopping with Melusi?

Me: he wanted to take his daughter but I couldn't allow that so I'm going to tag along then I will come at your office with my daughter hopefully we won't take that long

Banele: surprising but that's amazing

Me: yeah right



Banele: I will send you her picture right now  
I have to go

Me: okay we will talk

Banele: bye baby

Me: fuck you

He laughed. I shook my head disconnecting the phone. A door knock came on the door. I headed to the door. It was Siyavuya. He had a box of pizza with him.

Me: well I guess that's dinner

Siyavuya: you're not going to cook?

Me: Mandisa said that she's craving for pizza so no I won't be cooking today and Melusi is taking us out tomorrow

Siyavuya: ohh really?

Me: he's actually taking Mandisa out but I tagged along because I can't seem to leave him alone with my daughter

Siyavuya: he won't do anything to his daughter

Me: I know but I just can't seem to process everything

Siyavuya: it's fine

He gave me a peck.

Me: you're feeling okay?

Siyavuya: I'm better now thanks to you

Me: I guess I should have been a doctor

Siyavuya: you would look perfect though

Me: I know. Mandisa!

Siyavuya: yhoo baby

Me: I'm so sorry

He looked at me squinting his eyes. I laughed hugging him. I sat on top of him. He squeezed my ass.

Me: you seem to forget there's a child in here

Mandisa: a child who literally saw what just happened

We laughed looking at her. She took her sit and started having her slice of pizza.

.

Mandisa literally had to buy lot of things. I just wonder when she's 17 how is she going to be because right now she's worse. I just won't be able to handle. She's just worse ohh God. My daughter is literally something else and I can assure you all that. We were waiting on our order. I had bought

something for Khanyisile to eat since lunch will be in 30 minutes. Well Khanyisile is so beautiful. I now see why Banele loves her. She's just so perfect. Melusi asked me why I was buying two lunches. I told him I had to be somewhere after this. He understood. After some time our order has been called out. We took our food then we headed to the parking lot. Mandisa hugged Melusi then got in the car.

Me: thank you

Melusi: it's actually nothing but I should be the one thanking you

Me: please don't do that

Melusi: I'll see you around

Me: okay bye

He waved at me getting in his car. I got in the also then drove off to Banele's office.

Mandisa: we're not going home aren't we?

Me: yes we're going to meet up with my friend then we will go back home

Mandisa: can I eat?

Me: you can't eat in my car you know that

Mandisa: I'm hungry though

Me: do you think that I don't know?

Mandisa: jeez okay

I chuckled looking at her. I got at Banele's building after some time. We made our way to his floor. We passed the receptionist and she ran after me. I barged in Banele's office. He startled looking at me.

Banele: what if I was having sex woman?

I chuckled looking at him.

The girl: I tried to stop her

Me: ohh please you're lying

Banele: why you gotta be so rude?

Me: you can go

The girl walked away. I got inside the office.

Me: you can take a sit then have your food

Mandisa: thank you so much mom but what about him?

Me: he won't do anything just act as if this is my office okay?

Mandisa: okay mom

Banele: just go to her office already

Me: I'm leaving you with him okay?

She nodded chewing on her ribs. I walked to Khanyisile's office with her food. I found her

busy on her laptop. I closed the laptop. She looked at me.

Khanyi: can I help you Miss?

Me: you can help me because I'm looking for someone I can call a friend in you

Khanyi: me? Are you serious? Why me? I'm not that beautiful though

Me: that is where you're wrong. You're so beautiful. I know why I'm saying so.

Whoever said that you don't look beautiful they're dicks

She chuckled looking at me.

Khanyi: thank you. I haven't caught your name Miss

Me: I'm Simyolisiwe

Khanyi: I'm Khanyisile

Me: I already know you and I have something for you. I thought maybe you would be hungry

Khanyi: ohh God you didn't have to do this  
She already had tears on her eyes.

Me: please don't cry

She sniffed looking at me smiling. Banele appeared on the office. I looked at him squinting my eyes. He just smiled looking at me.

Banele: are you okay Khanyi?

Khanyi: yes sir I am

Banele: you're crying though

Khanyi: it's nothing serious you should worry about sir



Banele: if you came here to cause trouble young lady I will have you escorted

That's very good of him acting like he doesn't know me. I shook my head smiling.

Me: yes

Banele: I will leave you both to be and please have something to eat

Khanyi: ohh... okay

Banele walked away leaving me with Khanyisile. Her facial expression explained that she was astonished with Banele's reaction. I don't blame her though. We had our food getting to know each other and I have to say she's an amazing person. I just love how she is. It is just so beautiful. I have also noticed Banele looking at us. Is he really that in love? If he doesn't lay low

anyone will get to know that he's in love with Khanyisile and we don't want anyone knowing that very soon. He just needs to control himself that's all.

## FIFTEEN

I was smiling looking at Khanyisile as she was opening up to me speaking about her childhood. It was just so beautiful having to hear amazing stories about how she grew up. How she lost her virginity? How she had her first kiss? This one is literally the funniest. I don't want to lie. It's just the best out of all. How this guy farted when he was jerking off? Like I heard lot of stories. I even lost counts because the way she was talking ohh God. I don't know but it was just amazing. She stopped talking as her eyes landed on someone. Did that person really had to ruin our beautiful moment.

Khanyisile stood up from her sit with tears streaming down her face. I looked who it was. I couldn't see who it was. I didn't know

who was he. I got up for my sit. The guy looked at me smiling. I smiled weirdly looking at him.

Him: hey

Me: hey look Khanyi I have to go

Khanyi: this is my brother Skhumbuzo

Me: well I'm her new friend Simyolisiwe. It was nice to meet you but my daughter is probably worried and sick about me otherwise I should give you guys time to spend because it seems like you guys haven't seen each other in a long time

Khanyi: you're actually being honest thank you

Me: ohh no you need this baby. I will give you a call later on

Khanyi: I will be expecting it. And thank you for everything

Me: don't thank me as yet this is just the beginning. It was nice seeing you  
Skhumbuzo

Skhumbuzo: it was nice seeing you too  
Simyolisiwe and you're beautiful by the way

Me: I know

He chuckled as I walked away. I shook my head smiling. I walked to Banele's office. I found him talking with my daughter. I don't know what they were talking about but it seemed interesting. I sat next to my daughter. I kissed her forehead. She smiled looking at me.

Mandisa: are we leaving already?

Me: you want to leave already?

She giggled looking at me.

Mandisa: well I don't. I mean I'm still hearing uncle Banele's horrifying stories about people who betrayed him

I looked at Banele squinting my eyes. He smiled looking at me. I raised a middle finger to him. He chuckled looking at me.

Me: I will kill you Banele. What the hell is wrong with you?

Banele: I'm sorry but she actually love my stories you see

Mandisa: I do mom especially that one whereas they stab a person multiple times because that person did something bad and doesn't want to listen then they their stab their eye

Me: baby close your eyes

She closed her eyes with her hands. I punched Banele. He wasn't expecting me. He groaned in pain running to the bathroom to clean off the blood he had on his nose.

Mandisa: can I open now?

Me: of course

Mandisa: you punched uncle Banele?

Me: yes and I will do it again if he tells you murder stories. You're too young to know such a thing you see baby?

Mandisa: yes mom I do

Banele came out of the bathroom. He looked at me squinting his eyes. I shook my head smiling. He sat on the couch then looked over at me.

Banele: what did she say?

Me: we didn't talk about you but I have to say she's an amazing person. I have to say at some point she's a wife material just like me

Banele: that's very true. Hasn't Siyavuya popped the question yet?

Me: we haven't been together for 5 months and you're already talking about marriage. Dude just chill marriage can wait for now. I have to focus on raising her you see

Banele: at the end of the day you're going to have to get married and have more kids

Me: I'm okay with my baby girl here

Banele: she needs a sibling actually. Baby don't you need a sibling?



Mandisa: are you kidding me? Of course I do. I want a younger sister so we can play dress up

Banele: you see? She wants a sister

Me: over my dead body

Mandisa: mom

Me: I'm sorry it came out as a mistake

She shook her head smiling.

Me: we have to go

Mandisa: we're leaving already?

Me: yes you seem to forget Siya is waiting for us

Mandisa: I literally forgot. Uncle I will see you around

Banele: I will see you around too baby. If you want to see me don't hesitate to tell your mother okay?

Mandisa: I will do that

I smiled as Mandisa hugged Banele. It was literally beautiful. Banele kissed her forehead. I hugged him.

Me: I will see you around

Banele: bye

I walked out of the office with my daughter. We walked out of the building. We got in the car then drove straight to Siyavuya's house. We got there after some time.

Mandisa already ran inside the house. I shook my head walking in the house. I found Mandisa sitting next to Siyavuya. I sat on top of him.

Mandisa: mom really? Jeez now I have to leave the room

We laughed as she headed upstairs.

Siyavuya squeezed my ass looking at me. I gave him a peck.

Siyavuya: you smell amazing baby

Me: thank you it's actually a new perfume I bought

Siyavuya: well I love it so much

I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: how was the shopping?

Me: everything is in the car. Well the shopping went pretty amazing. Mandisa literally bought clothes that my parents didn't buy me when I was young like she bought so many clothes. I just hope she's going to wear them. At least the money she

bought the clothes with ain't mine but her father's money

Siyavuya: she's going to love clothes more than you

Me: I will kick her I won't have someone like that in my house

Siyavuya: let her be. Don't act like you don't love fashion

Me: I do but I'm not that too much as you can see

Siyavuya: you look perfectly amazing and sexy at the same time. I actually love that about you. It actually attracts me to you more

He said that as he snuck his hand on my dress. He rubbed my clit slowly. I moaned softly as we shared a passionate kiss. He

carried me to our room. We didn't want my daughter to walk on us having sex. It would literally be awkward.

## SIXTEEN

Siyavuya was busy walking his fingers on my belly. I smiled looking at him. He gave me a peck getting on top of me. He opened my legs then got in between them. He laid on my tummy. I ran my fingers on his hair.

Siyavuya: baby

Me: mhh?

Siyavuya: you know I love you right?

Me: I know very well you do

Siyavuya: I want to be with you forever

Me: really?

Siyavuya: I wouldn't have said that if I didn't love you at all. I really do love you my love. Listen there's something I'm going to do in the next couple of months. It's going to change your life completely. You might love

it or hate it. I don't know as yet but then the only thing I can tell you is that no one is going to come in between the two of us. Nothing is going to be done that is going to jeopardize our beautiful relationship. I'm so serious about you. I'm serious about both of us. I don't want you to ever doubt that I don't love you because I really do love you just as I said. I know we started off at the wrong foot with me calling you to come meet up with me because of business purposes then me putting you in trouble having for you to act like you're my real girlfriend. Well I don't regret asking you to act as my girlfriend look right now how it is. Everything is just so amazing. I never thought I was going to catch feelings for you in that process but here we are. I want to

promise you that everything is going to be fine with me, you and obviously your daughter Mandisa my best friend. Since we started off at the wrong foot let me just do this. Hello Miss my name is Siyavuya Mcunu and I have to say you're beautiful and very sexy

I giggled looking at him. I wiped my tears looking at him. He smiled looking at me.

Me: well thank you for the compliment Mr Mcunu you really had caught me off guard wow. Well I'm Simyolisiwe Nxubo

Siyavuya: it is nice knowing you Simyolisiwe. Can I please get to know you more or should I start?

I shook my head smiling. This isn't what I have expected. Siyavuya is surely crazy but this is actually cute having for him to do this



now. I mean we never did it before. We just got into a relationship and that's that. Now this is a great time.

Me: ohh please do the honours

Siyavuya: well there's something you don't know. I'm actually 28 not even close to 25

Me: that's actually not bad

Siyavuya: really?

Me: it's just a 5 year difference qha

Siyavuya: you're being honest but I don't look old do I?

Me: you actually look younger. I honestly thought you're 21 ke

Siyavuya: yaphambana yhoo

- You're crazy

He said looking at me squinting his eyes. I laughed looking at him. He rolled his eyes turning his back on me.

Me: ngoku nguwe ophambene

- Now you're the one who's crazy

He laughed turning to look at me.

Siyavuya: I guess it pisses you off

Me: it does actually. Have I ever turned my back on you?

Siyavuya: you wouldn't dare

Me: then don't do that shit

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: let me continue. I grew up with my parents and obviously my siblings.

Everything was so amazing. I never lacked for anything nor did my siblings. We had

everything we wanted. I had fake friends but I disowned them when I was doing my 11<sup>th</sup> grade because I needed focus. They distracted me so much. They made me do really bad stuff. Like going out at night to party, doing drugs, smoking weed, having sex with lot of different girls. Like my life that time was a mess but I made it out. I was addicted to drugs on my 9<sup>th</sup> grade. I had to go to rehab. Things went perfectly fine for me there. I stopped smoking weed and also the drugs. I was a clean man. I almost got arrested because of these friends I had. My dad was even giving up on me. One evening one girl came to me when I was doing my 10<sup>th</sup> grade. She said to me that “why are you messing up your life? Why do you associate yourself with those

type of friends? You're handsome. You come from a wealthy family. What you're basically doing is wrong. You're somehow disappointing the people that need you. You really think that these people you call friends are actually your friends? They're not your friends. If they were truly your friends they wouldn't be trying to mess up your life. Look I know you don't know me but please change not only for me but for yourself. You will be perfectly fine without having a friend. You have a family so make it a point that you focus on them. You don't want your family to disown you because I know somehow they're close on doing that. Please change. I hate seeing you like this. Change and do what is right and not this bullshit." She was actually pissed when she

said all that. I processed everything she said to me. I always avoided my friend because I was now close to that girl. She was so perfect and I kind of miss her. So yeah she became my girlfriend the same year. Everything was amazing until we both finished school. She had to relocate. We weren't able to do the long distance relationship. She broke up with me. I understood why. So yeah ever since I have been single but I did have some few hook-ups there and there. I have to be honest with you. I started having my company when I was 21. My father thought I stole some money but it wasn't that way. I was saving the entire time. My business has been doing okay since forever. Then I

happened to know about you three years ago and now here we are

Me: do you think the girl is married by now fuck boy?

Siyavuya: don't call me that

Me: you used to be though

Siyavuya: yes but that was years ago

Me: whatever, I asked you a question though

Siyavuya: I think so. I mean we're both 28 so that's the case

Me: mhhh, what she beautiful?

Siyavuya: she was so beautiful

Me: more beautiful?

Siyavuya: very beautiful

Me: wow okay

Siyavuya: seems like someone is jealous in here

Me: why would I be? I mean I'm with you and I'm sexy so please don't make it as if someone I haven't seen will make me doubt me being beautiful and also being jealous so please

He shook his head looking at me smiling. I rolled my eyes looking at him. He gave me a peck.

Siyavuya: now let's hear your story woman who are you?

I shook my head smiling.

Me: I'm actually 23. I had my daughter when I was 19. How I had sex with the father of the baby? I don't know how but it doesn't matter. Well I didn't have

everything I wanted growing up. I was appreciative with the little things that I had from my family you see. I never had any friends growing up. I was just a lonely girl who loves reading books and writing. So yes one evening I posted on my Facebook just a fictional story you see. So me posting everyone reacted and told me that I was very good with that I should have a page whereas I post my stories and I did. I wrote on my spare time then posted on the page. The audience I had was so beautiful. I met Precious through my writing. So we became friends and everything was so beautiful with the both of us. She stayed far from my place but she always came to see me and she understood my situation. Well I have dated someone before but things didn't



work out so yeah. When I got pregnant with my child everyone wasn't happy with me. They kicked me out of home. Remember I didn't have everything. I called up for Precious she came to get me. We stayed together at her apartment. Her parents did the most beautiful thing ever. They paid out for my registration fee and obviously the fees of institution I was studying at. Precious's mom took care of my baby when I was always at school. Melusi would come to check up on me and send me money. I was happy he was there. I don't want to lie. My life was completely getting better and better. I graduated when my baby girl was 2 years. Since I was now the part of the family. I talked to Precious's father about me opening a business because I had this

type of amount you see. He invested some money and taught me some basic things you see so months later I opened the business. Obviously when things start they start out slow and it was that way until I had clients after clients it was just amazing. I love progress you see. So yeah I bought my house then moved out at Precious house. Buying a house made me and Melusi closer. We always did what couples do but I didn't allow him to touch me any further because he was married. I stopped things when you came into my life. So yeah that's how things for me and my so called family came to my house asking for forgiven blah blah blah few months ago. I forgave them for the sake of my daughter but I don't want them back in my life. I'm perfectly fine without them. I

mean I got Precious, my daughter, my business, Precious's parents and obviously you. So I don't need them

Siyavuya: I'm actually astonished. I'm out of words

Me: I know

Siyavuya: your family are so heartless

Me: I know right?

He shook his head looking at me.

Siyavuya: let's not even talk about them

Me: thank you

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: since we know each other more can I please take you out on a date?

Me: ohh God

I said that giggling. Siyavuya smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: please my lady

Me: we can go anytime you want

Siyavuya: that is settled

He gave me a peck. I shook my head smiling as he ran to the en-suite. I looked at my phone then I went to my contacts. I wanted to talk to Precious's mom. It has been long we haven't talked. Work had me so busy by then. I hope she forgives me for not talking with her for some few weeks.

## SEVENTEEN

I called Precious's mom. She took her own time to answer the phone. It seemed like she was busy. Of course she has to be busy because she's a doctor. And Precious's dad he's a lawyer. He is so proud to be one. He always told us. It was so amazing seeing that. I love it so much. I don't want to lie. While waiting up for Precious's mom to answer the phone my daughter knocked on the door. I got off the bed then I wore my gown and my sleepers. I headed to the door. She stood there with her hands on her waist.

Me: what is it?

Mandisa: can I have the ice cream on the fridge?

Me: you didn't have to ask. I forgot to say it's yours. You can go have it

Mandisa: thank you. I promise I won't bother you anymore

Me: it's fine baby

She ran downstairs to the kitchen. I got back to the room. I sat on the bed. Siyavuya came out of the en-suite with a towel wrapped around his waist. Precious's mom answered the phone.

Mom: you know very well that I'm busy what's wrong?

Me: I missed you and dad

Mom: ohh please you know where we are you could come anytime to see us so you saying that you missed us makes me want to beat you up

I laughed. She giggled over the phone.

Me: I will come see you probably tomorrow.  
I will come with your grandchild. I'm  
precisely sure you missed her

Mom: we missed her isn't obvious?

Me: ohh mom

Mom: you're good though my baby?

Me: yes I am. I have lot of things I need to  
share with you

Mom: what's wrong baby?

Me: I will tell you tomorrow when I come to  
see you at work or home. Right now you're  
working I don't want to distract you

Mom: okay my love

Me: you know that I love you right?

Mom: I know baby. I love you too. I can't wait to see you both tomorrow

Me: I can't wait too

Mom: where's Precious?

Me: with her boyfriend Siyanda

Mom: do I know him?

Me: it's that guy dad had beaten him up when he saw him kissing your daughter

Mom: she's still with him?

Me: obviously mom what did you expect?

Mom: I thought she was going to find someone else. I mean I know my daughter

Me: I also know her but she loves him so much mom

Mom: I'm happy for her

Me: will dad be happy for her though?



Mom: I don't know my love but we will see from there

Me: did she tell you something that you should know?

Mom: it has been so long I last spoke with her so I don't know anything

Me: call her and ask her she might tell you

Mom: what's wrong?

Me: just call her

Mom: I will do that. Let me get back to work I'm needed

Me: okay mom we will talk

Mom: okay baby and greet Mandisa for me please

Me: I will do that bye

Mom: bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. Siyavuya sat next to me. I looked at him smiling.

Me: what is it?

Siyavuya: you look amazing

Me: thank you so much

Siyavuya: you were talking with your mom?

Me: yes but Precious's mom to be more specific

Siyavuya: you missed her?

Me: so much. Precious didn't tell them that she's pregnant?

Siyavuya: why?

Me: because she's in a relationship with the person her father doesn't want to be with since from years ago

Siyavuya: how long is she?

Me: she's two months pregnant

Siyavuya: that's not bad. Don't you want a kid?

Me: probably next year or in two years I don't know as yet. I don't want to rush myself. After all I got to focus on myself, my daughter, my business and obviously you so a baby will have to wait. I'm not even married. So I have to take things slow we both have to do so

Siyavuya: I understand you baby. I was just asking

I smiled looking at him.

Siyavuya: come here

I giggled sitting on top of him. I wrapped my hands around his neck. He grabbed my ass. I shook my head smiling. I gave him a peck.

Siyavuya: I love you so much

Me: I love you too baby

My phone rang as Siyavuya was about to give me a peck. He rolled his eyes noticing that I'm trying to take my phone. He got up with me.

Me: I have to take it. It must be important

Siyavuya: I don't care

I looked at him raising my eyebrow. He laughed looking at me. I shook my head as my phone stopped ringing. Siyavuya sat back down with me. My phone rang again. He let go off me. I took my phone. It was Banele. I answered my phone.

Me: yintoni?

- What is it?

Banele: voetsek yandiva?

- You hear me?

I laughed. What did I do now? I don't understand why Banele is like this now. The last time I remember I didn't do anything to him. But now here he is using vulgar language onto me.

Me: ndenze ntoni?

- What did I do?

Banele: listen here Simyolisiwe Nxubo when I call you I expect you to answer my call immediately. What if I was dying?

Me: what would be killing you? I was busy. I was going to call you back

Banele: you're not at work as far as I'm concerned

Me: what is it Banele?

He chuckled over the phone.

Banele: she's still scared of me even after what I did for her

Me: what did you do? I don't get it why you didn't tell me because you had to do so I can tell you to go ahead and do it or not.

This time around you can't make your own decisions I do. You seem to forget I'm helping you here to get the girl you love and want to be with so before doing something address it to me

Banele: I never thought about it

Me: you're the most feared person but you can't just think of a mere thing? Ustlastla

- You're a fool

Banele: wabona wathoma kungbore.a

- You see you're starting to bore me?

I laughed sitting on the bed.

Me: just tell me what did you do?

Banele: so I bought her a dress, heels, accessories, those type of weaves you guys wear, a new phone yeah I think that's all. So I went to give it to her personally not so long ago. She looked at me surprised wondering what's wrong. Everything was wrapped in a box you see. So I put the box on her working table with a little note. The note said "be my girl" I didn't even include my name nor had stated who it came from. I'm not romantic that's the thing with me. I didn't know how I was going to pour my

feelings out there for her especially at the workplace. She asked what's happening. I said I bought you something and I hope you love it. She said okay. Like pulling that okay. She went through the box. Her eyes popped out. She smiled as she went through the box. She looked so beautiful when she was smiling. I loved the sight I was seeing. I don't want to lie. She asked why did I buy her those stuff. I told her to read the card that was written. She read the card. She gasped in air looking at me. I didn't wait for her to say anything. I told her I'm giving her a month to think about it. I went to my office after saying that. Do you think I did the right thing? I'm starting to think she's going to ignore me or say no. I don't want her to reject me



Me: what you did is really amazing

Banele: really?

Me: yes that's being romantic actually. I love what you did. If I was Khanyi I would have said yes already without hesitation. But she does need time whatsoever to think about this. I mean you just said to her "be my girl" and I hate that. You could have said – I know we don't know each other very well but can we please get to know each other by you being my girlfriend. I know you probably think I'm a bad person and I'm not that's why you getting to know me you will see what type of person I am and what is it that I do. So please Khanyisile Dlamini can you be my girlfriend? – Like if you said that to her she would have took you serious. I'm not saying she didn't but she would have

seen that you're genuine about her and obviously you opening up to her and telling her what is it that you do. Otherwise it has been done. I won't say go do it again because if you do so she will think that you're crazy. But I'm happy for what you did

Banele: well I try actually. I mean I don't do relationships but Khanyi is making me want to be committed to her and do what is right. I'm not getting younger anymore. I want to reach 30 already married

Me: you know that you will have to take things slowly right?

Banele: I know but I just hope she agrees that what matters the most to me

I smiled shaking my head.

Banele: she just got inside. We'll talk after some time

Me: don't disconnect I want to hear everything

Banele: okay dude

I laughed. Siyavuya looked at me leaning against the doorway.

Khanyi: something confuses me here

Banele: okay what is it?

Khanyi: why do you want me to be your girl?

Banele: well I...

The phone got cut. I sighed wondering what's wrong. I put my phone on the side.

Siyavuya: you still talk to him?

Me: well yes we're just friends though

Siyavuya: if you say so

Me: I'm only yours believe me when I say it

He smiled looking at me.

Siyavuya: are you serious?

Me: I've never been more serious in my life

Siyavuya: I love you

Me: I love you too baby

He came to me then gave me a peck. We shared a passionate kiss leading us from taking each other's clothes off. This is something I should get used to because wow. I never thought I would be in this situation again. Siyavuya knows what he is doing when it comes to making love. I don't want to lie it is just so amazing making you somehow getting addicted to it. I love this person so much.

## EIGHTEEN

I woke up earlier than anticipated. I had long got ready the only person who was left was my daughter. I didn't tell her but I know she's going to be happy when I tell her where we're going. My daughter loves Precious's mom and it's undeniably true. I won't be surprised when we get to Precious's mom and she literally doesn't want to be off her. It is just cute when she's close to her and I love it so much. I don't want to lie. Siyavuya have long left to go at work. I told him where I was going. He was understanding as always. I got out of my room then went to my daughter's room. I knocked already letting myself inside her room. My daughter was seated on the bed

busy with her hair. She looked at me smiling.

Me: did you take a bath?

She nodded taking off her gown. She was wearing her favourite dress with also her favourite sandals. She looked beautiful as always. I walked up to her. I made her sit on her bed. I did her hair.

Me: we're going to see grandma

Mandisa: when? Now?

She asked already excited looking at me with her eyes glooming. I smiled looking at her.

Me: well we're going to see her right now

Mandisa: ohh my God... uhmm okay let's go

I shook my head smiling looking at her. We walked out of her room. I got my belongings

at my room then we headed out of the house. My daughter was already in the car waiting for me. I locked up the house then I got in the car. I drove off with music playing on the car. Mandisa kept her eyes focused on the road singing along to the songs she knew. I looked at her smiling.

Mandisa: don't you think we should get grandma something for her? We can't just get to her without having anything at all. I mean that would be disrespectful since it has been ages we haven't seen her and grandpa

Me: are you really my daughter? Because wow you sure know what you're saying. You just surprised me baby

Mandisa: ohh please mommy

I shook my head looking at the road.

Me: I don't know what is it that we can get grandma. What do you have in mind?

Mandisa: how would I know woman?

Me: ohh my God did you just... Mandisa

She giggled as I tickled her with my left hand.

Mandisa: mom! Stop! I can't keep on any longer!

I laughed as I stopped tickling her. We got at the mall. We made our way inside then we headed to Foschini. I bought Precious's mom a dress, heels and also a coat. Just in case. I know she loves my style. We went to Woolworths then bought her — her favourite chocolate cake, her favourite ice cream, her favourite bottle of wine and lot of more goodies. We got back in the car



then drove off to the hospital where she works at. My daughter was having a snack as my phone rang. It was Siyavuya. I smiled answering the phone.

Me: sthandwa sami

- My love

I heard him chuckle over the phone. I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: my love

Me: what's wrong?

Siyavuya: have you arrived?

Me: no we're getting closer. We had to stop by at the mall because Mandisa suggested that we get something for Precious's mom and we did

Siyavuya: that's amazing for her to think that way

Me: I know right? She takes after her beautiful mother

Siyavuya: yeah right, she does

Me: ohh please

Siyavuya: what is she doing now?

Me: she's having some of her grandmother's goodies

Siyavuya: let just hope she won't get scold

Me: ohh please Precious's mom won't do that especially when it comes to her. She loves Mandisa so much

Siyavuya: of course she does. She raised her with you

Me: you're being honest though

Siyavuya: I know. I just called to check up on you and Mandisa

Me: I really appreciate it. Thank you so much baby

Siyavuya: it's my pleasure baby

Me: good bye baby

Siyavuya: bye my love

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I pulled over at the hospital. We got out of the car then walked inside with stuff we bought up for Precious's mom. We headed straight to her office. We knocked and she responded for us to get inside. I opened the door and we made our way inside. Mandisa smiled widely trying to push herself inside.

Mandisa: makhulu!

- Grandma

She ran towards her and threw herself to her. A smile suppressed on her face. I shook my head smiling sitting on the table.

Mom: ohh my God you're so heavy. What are you feeding my granddaughter woman?

She said that looking at me. We both laughed shifting our eyes to Mandisa.

Mom: you're so beautiful what's wrong?

Me: what do you mean what's wrong?

Mom: did you find a boyfriend?

I smiled shaking my head looking at her.

Mom: after so many years why now?

Me: I don't know mom. It all just happened so quick but I have to say this person loves me and I also love him. He just makes me happy and it's pretty evident

Mom: I should see this guy with your father

Me: mom it's too early. We haven't even made half a year together so we're taking things slow but I have met his parents and his entire family

Mom: already? How come? I mean you said it yourself you guys haven't been together for about six months or so — so tell me how? I'm confused

Me: it's kind of a long story

Mom: I got all the time in the whole world

Me: you know that I don't date my colleagues or the people I work with right mom?

Mom: I also don't do that but yeah tell me more

Me: well the guy's name is Siyavuya I won't tell you his surname because I know for sure that you and dad are going to search up for him. I just know. Let me just get right to it. Well I met up Siyavuya when my so called "parents" paid me a visit. Well technically we met for business purposes then we met again at my office. He asked for a favour from me. He told me that he wanted me to come with him at this other party because his mother is sick and whatsoever so he wants a date. I agreed to go out with him. When the day arrives as he was driving he told me that we were going to his parents house and he wants me to act as his girlfriend for a whole entire month — I was surprised why and at the same time I wanted to punch him. He

explained his situation about him not having a girlfriend and now he had to bring a girlfriend at his home you see. So yeah I met his parents that way. I didn't plan on meeting up with them. Obviously it had to be fake for the whole month but things escalated to the point that we fell in love with each other in that whole entire month but we dated after a month obviously and here we are perfectly amazing and in love with each other

Mom: you're in a relationship with a person you're working with?

Me: mom

Mom: you're working with him that's the thing baby

Me: it doesn't matter anymore. Just be happy I found someone who loves me for me

Mom: I should meet up with him and that would be Saturday not after three, four, five or eleven months. Saturday I want to talk to him and you better tell him otherwise we're going to have a huge problem

Me: okay I will tell him when we get back eventually

Mandisa: I'm going to pee I will be back

Me: no I'm coming with you

Mom: she's old enough to go by herself

Me: I just can't seem to not let her go by herself after what anticipated to her two months ago

Mom: what happened to her?



Me: I'll be back mom

I walked out of her office with my daughter. We walked to the restroom. My daughter did her business then washed her hands. We went back to my mom's office. She was carrying Mandisa's file. I sighed looking at her.

Mom: why didn't you tell me?

Me: I was going to tell you but everything is okay now

Mom: she was raped for goodness sake. She's not even a teenager for goodness sake. Not that she was supposed to be a teenager but you know what I'm trying to say. Who on earth raped her?

Me: Melusi's son Musa

Mom: what!?

Mandisa looked at her with her eyes popped out.

Me: mom

Mom: I'm sorry baby you can carry on. Why would he do something like that to his sister?

Me: I don't know. I just never knew why

Mom: I'm sorry

Me: no mom don't please. It's all over mom

She walked up to me. We shared a hug. A knock interrupted us. Mom groaned. I laughed looking at her.

Mom: being a doctor literally makes me a pussy sometimes

Me: mom you didn't say that

Mom: ohh please now they need me. I will find you here right?

I nodded looking at her. She smiled kissing my cheek. She also kissed Mandisa's cheek then headed out. I helped myself with one of the chocolate that was in the plastic bag filled with goodies.

## NINETEEN

FEW DAYS LATER...

I quickly ran downstairs as I heard my daughter screaming downstairs. I found her in Siyavuya's arms. My daughter hugged him tight. I sighed in relief. I thought something was happening to her. I just fear for her now and then. I just don't want anything to happen to my daughter ever again. Siyavuya noticed me at the stairway. I smiled looking at him. He walked up to me carrying Mandisa. He gave me a peck. I bit his lower lip. He chuckled softly. We shared a passionate kiss and my daughter had to interrupt us. She pulled us getting off from Siyavuya pissed as fuck. She headed upstairs to her room not wanting to hear anything from us. I pulled Siyavuya and we

shared a proper passionate kiss with us being touchy. I moaned softly as Siyavuya squeezed my ass.

Me: ohh wait baby

We both laughed pulling out. I wiped Siyavuya's lips looking at him smiling.

Me: I missed you

Siyavuya: I have been gone just for few days though baby

Me: well I missed you and I'm glad you're here because we have to be somewhere

Siyavuya: where are we going?

Me: you will see and please don't hate me after this

Siyavuya: baby

Me: are you gonna watch me take a shower or you're just going to take action?

Siyavuya: I don't mind getting the torture of having to watch you taking a shower

Me: well let's go

I pulled him upstairs to my room. We got to my room. I took off my nightdress then I headed to the lounge with Siyavuya. I got in the shower then washed my body. Siyavuya looked at me smiling.

Mandisa: mommy!

Me: what!?

Mandisa: can I wear that white short dress with my sandals?

Me: okay baby and you better hurry up please

Mandisa: of course

Siyavuya looked at me smiling.

Siyavuya: where are we going?

Me: we're going to the hospital to do some basic things like check ups you see

Siyavuya: I don't believe you

Me: you'll see baby

I got out of the shower after doing the necessary things. I took a dry towel then I wiped myself. Siyavuya walked up to me. I smiled looking at him.

Siyavuya: I wanna touch you but I don't want to make us late to whoever we're going to see because I know how I'm going to get if I do so

Me: when we come back I guess

Siyavuya: I guess so too

I shook my head smiling. We headed back to the room. I applied lotion on my body then I wore my black dress with my AF1. Siyavuya looked at me weird. I laughed at his face expression. He shook his head smiling looking at me.

Me: you're so weird let's go

He laughed walking out with me. We headed downstairs. Mandisa was already downstairs waiting for us. We headed to Siyavuya's car. He started driving off to the hospital. Siyavuya walked his hand on my thighs. I looked at him raising my eyebrow. He didn't even look at me but smiled looking at the road. I opened my legs a little wider. He went further and rubbed my clit. I bit my hand trying so hard not to make a sound.



Mandisa: mom are you okay?

Me: yes I am okay why?

Mandisa: you're biting your hand and your face tells me otherwise. Maybe you should come sit with me

Me: baby I'm okay

Mandisa: okay just don't do it again please

Me: I won't

I looked at Siyavuya. He turned the music up then went back in rubbing my clit. I squeezed his hand as I felt like I'm about to cum. I didn't want to mess up my dress not to mention Siyavuya's car. He let go of me then he licked his hand. I shook my head smiling looking at him. My phone rang as we were closer to the hospital. I looked at the caller ID. It was my mom. Not my

biological mother though. It was Precious's mom. Talking about my biological mother. It has been so long I last heard from them. I only heard from them months ago and that was that. I guess it is precisely obviously that they were making me a fool. I just hope they realise at some point that they should change. At some point I still need my parents. I answered my phone looking at Siyavuya.

Me: hey

Mom: I'm not at the hospital. You have to come to my house

Me: we have to turn now?

Mom: yes — well your dad also wants to meet up with your boyfriend. I told him about him actually not so long ago. He

didn't want me to leave so technically I'm at fault and I'm sorry

Me: no it's fine we're coming

Mom: does he know?

Me: I didn't tell him. It's going to be a surprise for him. I don't even think he's ready for him — you know who I'm talking about. We'll be there in no time

Mom: Precious is also going to be here in few minutes

Me: I didn't know she is back

Mom: I also didn't know. She said she has something to tell us

Me: wow okay. We'll be there in no time

Mom: okay baby

I disconnected the phone call after she said that. I looked at Siyavuya.

Me: you have to drive back. I will direct you to where we're going

Mandisa: we're going...

I interrupted her because I knew she was going to blow this thing up. I don't want Siyavuya to know as yet what's going on because I know at some point he won't agree.

Me: don't make me mad

Mandisa: ohh I forgot I'm sorry

I shook my head smiling. I directed Siyavuya to Precious's home. We got there after some time. I hit my head on the dashboard when I saw my dad at the door folding his hands. Mandisa ran after him screaming.

Siyavuya: baby what's happening?

Me: let's go before we make him mad

Siyavuya: what do you mean?

Me: you don't want to be pointed by a gun do you?

Siyavuya: what!?

I got off the car. I held Siyavuya's hand then we headed to the house. I hugged dad. He kissed my forehead smiling.

Dad: you're so beautiful

Me: thank you dad

Siyavuya: good day sir

Dad: let it be not that you interrupt me when I'm talking to my daughter please

Siyavuya: I'm sorry sir

Dad: I'm kidding. How are you?

Siyavuya: I'm fine sir and how are you?

Dad: I'm good especially since I'm seeing my daughter after so long and also my granddaughter

Siyavuya: they have been bad to you. They should have done what is expected

Dad: tell me about it. And you are?

Me: dad let just get inside. We will do the introductions inside. I need to see mom and...

Dad: Precious ungu mnqundu womtu yazi  
- Precious you're such an asshole

We all looked at the gate and Precious wasn't alone but with Siyanda. She was really pregnant. She looked so beautiful. I pulled dad inside the house. I wanted to laugh but I held myself. I didn't want to

make this any worse. We headed to the lounge. I found mom watching TV. I hugged her before taking my sit.

Mom: sthandwa sami u'right?

- My love are you okay?

Dad: your daughter is pregnant

Mom: Simyolisiwe?

Me: yhooh mama I don't want one as yet

Precious appeared at the lounge with Siyanda. I smiled looking at her. Mom looked at Precious astonished.

Mom: you're pregnant?

Precious nodded not knowing what to say.

Mom: you're pregnant?

Precious: mom

Mom: you're fucking pregnant!

Me: mom you can't use that language in front of her

Mom: I'm sorry

Precious: mom I'm so sorry

Mom: how long are you?

Precious: three months

Dad: who should I talk to first? Siyanda you don't listen do you?

Siyanda: she didn't want me to leave her and I'm sorry but I love her. She's the only person who has been there for me even on my worst. I love her and I got good intentions with her. You think that me making her pregnant was a way of me to trap her? No, it all happened just like that. There's nothing we could do but the baby is already here and I want to do what's right.



Baby please look at me. You know that I love you right? You're the most extraordinary person. Will you please marry me? Will you please make me the happiest man on earth and do me the honours of marrying me? I want to do extravaganza things with you so please baby?

We all looked at dad. He just folded his arms. He nodded after some time. Precious looked at Siyanda. She agreed. Siyanda slid a ring on her finger then they both shared a passionate kiss. This was actually beautiful. Dad took Siyavuya away from me and went to the other room. They were just going to talk. I know my dad is going to be hard on him at some point. That's actually how he shows his love. It always had been like that.

Melusi knows that since he's the father to my beautiful baby girl.

## TWENTY

My mom haven't said anything but she kept looking at Precious squinting her eyes. I think she hates the idea that she's pregnant. I think she never expected for her to be pregnant. We were seated on the dining table having something to eat. Each and every time my mom would take a bite chewing her food she will look at Precious mostly. Obviously dad was okay because of what they talked about at the other room. At this point I wanted to laugh because the table was quiet. Each and every time we get together mom always speaks but now it's a different story because she's mad at someone right now. Dad looked at mom. He shook his head chuckling.

Me: mom are you okay?

Mom: she's pregnant

Me: I also got pregnant though

Mom: yours it's a different story because you were drugged... Ohh God I wasn't supposed to say that

She said that realising what she said. I looked at her raising my eyebrow.

Me: mom what are you talking about?

Siyavuya: you have mentioned several times that you don't know what really happened between you and Melusi leading for you to be pregnant with Mandisa. Something happened that day just that you can't remember any of it

Me: maybe I was too drunk

Mom: you weren't drunk, you were given a drug that makes you forget anything

whatsoever of what happened to you that day. And it's the Rohypnol drug. I think. You were actually raped. I don't understand why Melusi didn't become honest about this matter to you because you did tell us that he was busy flirting with you then the next thing you wake up to the bed next to him and he tells you that you guys had sex. It's just unbelievable. He raped you. I guess it does run in the family because Musa also raped his little sister not so long ago. I just don't understand why. Each and every time you did check ups to me I found out that. I thought you knew something

Tears streamed down my face. Why would Melusi do something like this to me? I got off the table then I walked to the kitchen with everyone calling out my name. I took

my car keys then I headed out of the house. I got in my car then I drove straight to Melusi's house. At some point I knew he might be home or not but I wanted to ask him. I just don't get it. Why me? Why did he have to do that to me? I didn't do nothing to him though. He should have just left me alone. Right now I'm stuck with him because he raped me and got me pregnant. I don't know why mom didn't tell me all of this earlier. This thing actually makes me so mad at some point. My phone rang. I ignored it because I knew it was the others. I got at Melusi's house after some time. I made my way inside. I didn't even knock. Thandeka startled as I slammed the door hard. She looked at me astonished.

Me: where's your husband?

Thandeka: you can't just walk into my house like that. Who the hell do you think are?

Me: I got no time for you just tell me where's your husband

Thandeka: he's at his office

Me: can you do me the honours of showing me to his office please?

I really hated talking like this. Thandeka walked and passed the lounge. She showed me the door to the office. I nodded already making my way inside the room. Melusi was on a phone call. I closed the door behind me. Melusi looked at me astonished. I walked up to him. He ended the call then looked at me smiling.

Me: look I want you to be honest with me here before I do something to you and you're not going to like it at all

Melusi: okay what is it?

Me: what happened seven years ago? What did you actually do to me? Why can't I remember that we had sex?

Melusi: you were drunk actually

Me: Melusi please don't make me mad tell me the truth

Melusi: I'm telling you the truth

I walked up to him and punched him on his nose. He groaned in pain holding his bleeding nose.

Melusi: what the fuck is wrong with you? Why the hell would you punch me? Ohhh God



He tried to back away but I stood in between him. He looked at me in pain.

Me: now again what the fuck happened that day?

Melusi: I already told you what happened you what more do you want me to say to you

Me: I want you to look at me in my eye and tell me that you drugged me that night and fucking raped me

Melusi: how... I didn't do that to you why would you think I would do something like that to you?

Me: Melusi how can I not remember what happened? This has you written all over. I should be able to remember a little thing but I can't. Melusi please be honest with me

He sighed looking at me.

Me: I don't want to hurt you because I will if you don't become honest with me

Melusi: but...

I punched him on his tummy and also on his face. He groaned in pain kneeling in the floor. Someone barged in the room. I

looked at the back it was my parents with Siyavuya, Precious, Siyanda and Thandeka. I kicked Melusi with my knee on his face.

Siyanda pulled me away from Melusi. I was seriously going to hurt him to the point that he doesn't know how to walk for days.

Mom: are you out of your damn mind? You could have caused him injuries. Do you want to go to jail?

Me: he wouldn't even dare send me to jail. I want him to become honest with me. I want him to tell me the truth. I want him to tell me what happened that night? I would have remembered a little detail but I can't remember a mere thing. He did something to me

Thandeka: Melusi what is she talking about?

Melusi: about that other night seven years ago

Thandeka: what did you do to her?

Melusi: I didn't do nothing to her

Precious: come to think of it when

Simyolisiwe went to the toilet you ordered another drink for her. I forgot to tell her when she came back that you bought a drink for her. And why would you buy a

drink for her then don't say anything after that?

Melusi: I bought her a drink because I wanted to do it

I took out my phone then I dialled the bartender's number. He gave them to me before I even met him at the club. I forgot that I even had his number. I just hope his number is still available. The phone got picked up. I sighed anxiously putting the phone on speaker. I wanted everyone to hear.

Me: hello

Him: hey

It was really him. I took a deep breath before having to say another thing. Everyone was already looking at me.

Me: I don't know if you remember me but few years ago I came with my friend at the club you work at

Him: you're Simyolisiwe? And your friend is Precious?

Me: yes thank goodness you remember us

Him: what can I do for you?

Me: I have a question for you about that night

Him: you can ask me it's fine

Me: you saw that guy who was busy flirting with me busy wanting my attention right?

Thandeka gave Melusi a dead stare.

Him: I definitely did. He even did a generous thing by ordering you a drink but he kept it anonymous to you obviously because he knew you weren't going to accept the drink

but I saw him put benzodiazepines drugs on your drink. Before I could stop you from drinking the drink it was already too late. I should have told you but I didn't I'm really sorry

Everyone looked at Melusi. I sighed as I felt my eyes burning. I didn't want to cry in front of him.

Me: wow he actually did drug my drink because he knows very that when it's combined with alcohol I won't be able to taste a thing. I should have been also careful but I didn't. You don't need to apologize

Him: you're sure?

Me: yes I am. You don't have to be worried

Him: why are you asking me after so long?

Me: I just found out something because I have a kid with this person but I can't seem to remember when we had sex so technically he...

He interrupted me.

Him: raped you

Me: exactly

Him: ohh God why would he do that to you?

Me: I don't know what intentions he had for me but I hate what he did to me

Him: you know what to do. Do what makes you think is okay. You don't deserve what happened to you

Me: technically — but it all happened so there's nothing that can be done but the

only thing I will do to him right now is beat the shit out of him

Him: please do that

Me: okay thank you for telling me what I didn't know

Him: it's fine good bye

Me: bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I sighed looking at Melusi.

Me: why?

Melusi: I'm sorry

Me: you lied to me and when I asked you so nicely you lied to me again. You think that I'm a fool? I just hope she leaves you. You don't deserve her. You wasted enough of her time. You cheated on her by fucking raping me. You should have left me alone



but you didn't. If I take matters into my own hands you will be a dead person but then I suggest you choose between three things: either I beat the shit out of you right now and shoot both of your legs so you won't be able to walk again. If necessary though or I call out my friend who's a gangster actually two friends I forgot. Obviously if I call one of them they will punish you then cut your dick and kill you or you turn in yourself and face your time in jail. You choose between the three

Mom: Simyolisiwe you can't be serious?

Me: I'm dead ass serious. So what's it gonna be?

Melusi: you can do what you want to do with me

Me: do you have a sjambok?

Thandeka: I can fetch it for you

Me: please do

She walked out of the office.

Me: are you gonna watch me beat him up or not?

Precious: I wanna see everything

She said that excitedly. I shook my head smiling. Thandeka came back with the sjambok. I smiled as she gave it to me.

Me: I don't want to hurt no one so please excuse yourselves

They all walked out as I took off my shoes then I looked at Melusi before starting to beat him up. I didn't show him any mercy. I beaten him for just few minutes and he was already crying apologizing to me for what he did to me. He wanted me to stop but I

couldn't do so until I was satisfied. My arm got tired after 20 minutes. I decided to stop and let him be. He was even bleeding and I didn't care. I even had blood on me. I will shoot him when he at least expected me because I don't want to make matters more worse right now. I walked out of the room with my shoes then I headed to the lounge. Everyone looked at me astonished. I took my car keys then walked out of the house. I got in my car then I sighed before driving back home. I wanted to get my daughter then go back to my house and take a long refreshing bath. I deserve it after what happened.

## TWENTY ONE

I found my daughter asleep at home. At least she wasn't alone. I woke her up. I wanted to be at my house. She was beyond pissed that I woke her up. I had to do it somehow. I bid good byes to everyone. Siyavuya got in the car. He drove us back to my house. He kept looking at me.

Me: If you think I will kill you I won't do that. Just that don't mess with me please

Siyavuya: you have blood on you

Me: this is actually nothing. I was supposed to torture him but I thought to myself he has kids he still needs to take care off but I will shoot him when he least expected me

Siyavuya: where will you get a gun?

Me: I got one. Just that I hid it. I don't want it to fall in wrong places and in wrong hands. Where I put the gun it's safe and it won't be found by anyone but me

Siyavuya: I didn't know you could punch a person to a certain point that they bleed  
I chuckled looking at him.

Me: well my friend Aqhamile. You know him very well. So obviously when I found out he was gangster I wanted to report him but he threatened me. I was pregnant that time. So he made it a habit of him coming to see me at the campus each and every day bringing me snacks. What he did was absolutely amazing that made me love him as a friend and a brother nothing more. So when I was six months pregnant he took me to his warehouse and told me that he was

going to teach me how to fight. I obviously thought he was going to do what others do like boxing but no this person punched me in my face breaking my nose. He laughed as I cried cursing at him. I didn't understand why he punched me. I wasn't prepared at all. What's even worse is that he's a guy not a girl so I couldn't handle his punch each and every time we practiced every time. I only was able to handle him when Mandisa was two months old. He taught me the basic of what is it that should be done especially when there's danger and obviously when a person tests me. He obviously taught me how to use a gun. I'm a pro when it comes to having to fight someone and using a gun. I remember when my baby was five months old. I came

with her at the warehouse only to know that I had to kill someone. I obviously asked one of Aqhamile's worker to take my baby out. I didn't want her to see me doing cruel things you see. So Aqhamile taught me first with a doll on how to kill a person and obviously cutting off their penis. I killed my first person and yes I was petrified for a whole month but I still went back again and did it over and over again until Aqhamile told me I was good enough to protect myself and my daughter. So yeah the person that helped me is Aqhamile. I appreciate him

Siyavuya: if I cheat on you, you will hurt me?

Me: I won't but if you provoke me you leave me no choice but to hurt you. I hate people

who hurt someone so make it a point that it won't reach that target okay?

Siyavuya: yes mam

I shook my head smiling looking at the road. I looked at my daughter at the review mirror. She was asleep peacefully. I sighed looking at her. Siyavuya held my hand and kissed it. I smiled laying my head on his shoulder.

- 
- 

I was busy on my laptop looking at this other article that caught my eye. My phone rang disturbing me. I sighed wondering who is it. I looked at the caller ID. It was Mandisa's principal. I sighed answering the phone wondering what's wrong.



Principal: Miss Nxubo

Me: yes Principal how can I help you? I'm kind of in a middle of something

Principal: your daughter did some awful thing to her classmate

Me: I don't understand. What are you trying to say?

Principal: your daughter stabbed a kid on his arm

Me: someone might have provoked her to do something like that. My daughter has never hurt anyone you know that very well. What did the boy do to my daughter for her to stab him?

Principal: I don't know

Me: ask him

I heard shuffling sounds. My daughter might have got triggered because of what happened to her. She wouldn't hurt anyone that is what I'm sure at.

Principal: he slap her and touched her private part

Me: exactly he provoked her. You know that he has triggered something to my daughter now?

Principal: no mam

Me: now my daughter has to have nightmares of what happened to her because of that boy. He didn't have any rights whatsoever to touch my daughter

Principal: I know mam. I'm very sorry mam

Me: I'm coming to get my daughter

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I cleaned up the table then I locked the office carrying some of my stuff. I headed out to the building to my car. I drove off to my daughter's school. I just hope Siyavuya comes back so he can do what he's best at. He's basically the only person that can make my daughter forget about what happened to her. I got into my daughter's school after some time. I made my way to the Principal's office. I found the Principal talking with one of the kid that had a bandage on his hand. My daughter ran up to me. Her eyes were red and puffy. I sighed looking at her. We walked out of the office then headed straight to the car. I drove off to McDonald to get my daughter something to cheer her up a little bit.

## TWENTY TWO

My daughter hasn't said anything to me after me fetching her from school. I just don't understand why this kid could mess up my daughter's day just like that. I hope the school principal does the right thing because if I report this kid. It is going to be a huge problem and it will bring eyes to everyone else. I walked up to my daughter. I hugged her from behind. I heard her sigh. She changed her position and looked at me. She smiled looking at me. I held both of her hands. I wanted to talk to her.

Me: baby are you okay?

Mandisa: well now I am

Me: what happened? Please tell me

Mandisa: the teacher was not in the class because she was called by the principal — so what happened is that I was busy reading the book you've bought me few weeks ago. While I was reading this book this classmate of mine that I don't like came and sat next to me. I didn't entertain him. I just ignored him and read my book. This boy kept calling my name and he was irritating me so much. I stood up wanting to go to the toilet to excuse myself because I hated his presence. He touched my vagina. I slapped him. Everyone gasped in air. I didn't care. I mean he didn't have to touch me I don't know why he touched me though. He got up and touched me again. This time around I got extremely mad. I slapped him then I stabbed him with my pencil. He slapped me.

I don't know when the teacher got in the class. She immediately took me to the Principal's office until you came and fetched me. This boy made me remember what brother Musa did to me. I hated every second of it mom

Me: I'm so sorry I wasn't there

Mandisa: no mom it's fine. You were at work there's nothing you could have done

Me: should I call Siyavuya so he can cheer you up? I want him to cheer you up. I know when he's going to get here you will be happy. I hate seeing you this way baby

Mandisa: you can call him but I'm going to sleep. I'm tired

Me: do you want to change schools? Or you're still going to be okay with learning

from the school you're basically at. I just want to hear from you

Mandisa: you can get me to another if things get worse but now I'm fine mom. As long as everyone will keep their distance away from me that's all

Me: you will go to school the following week

Mandisa: talk with the principal first

Me: I will do that then

Mandisa: okay then

I kissed her forehead then I walked to the laundry room. I wanted to do something that was going to distract my mind. My phone rang as I folded some of the clean clothes. I looked at the caller ID. It was Siyavuya. I smiled answering the phone. I

put it on speaker because I was busy moving around.

Siyavuya: sthandwa sami

- My love

Me: baby

Siyavuya: where are you? I was at your office but I didn't find you there

Me: I left. I had to fetch Mandisa from her school because I have been called by the principal

Siyavuya: why? What happened? What happened to Mandisa? Is she okay?

Me: whoa baby one question at a time

He sighed. I could sense he was worried about Mandisa.



Siyavuya: I'm sorry just that I'm worried about her

Me: she's doing okay just that what happened is that this other boy she's classmate with provoked her. He troubled Mandisa by touching her private part twice so Mandisa stabbed him with a pencil and the boy slapped her. So I got called because of that

Siyavuya: I hope she's going to another school. I mean if he could touch someone's pussy the others will also do that

Me: I spoke to Mandisa about that but she said next year she can because she's fine

Siyavuya: we won't be next to her so what makes you think she will be okay? I don't know baby

Me: just few months left baby let her be

Siyavuya: I will talk to her when I come back. Did you tell Melusi?

Me: no I didn't bother myself

Siyavuya: he needs to see his daughter

Me: I know but if he wants to come he can. I'm not going to stop him after all he's Mandisa's father nothing more

Siyavuya: I hear you baby. We'll talk later on actually I will see you later on. I love you so much and have a nice day my love

Me: I...

He disconnected the phone as I was about to speak. I didn't understand why he didn't let me finish but then I won't be mad for something like that. I mean he might be busy who knows.

- 

Siyavuya just got to my house. My daughter was still in her room. She hasn't walked out ever since we came back. I really hate what they did to her. Siyavuya walked up to me looking all handsome. He gave me a peck already leaning with his elbows on the kitchen counter.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

Me: no I'm fine. Just that I'm worried about her that's all I can say

He smiled looking at me. He walked up to me and hugged me from the back. He squeezed my breasts. I shook my head smiling closing the pots. I also switched off the stove because I was already done cooking today's dinner.

Siyavuya: can I take you out?

Me: you don't have to ask. You can just surprise me. I will go out with you but when?

Siyavuya: I will tell you when I have decided okay?

Me: don't take too long though

Siyavuya: I will try

I shook my head smiling. Siyavuya lifted my dress up from my back. I shook my head as I felt Siyavuya squeezing my butt cheeks altogether. I moaned softly wanting to turn but I was forbidden. Siyavuya carried me and placed me nicely on the kitchen counter. He had my legs wide open. He went in between them then I felt his tongue on my pussy. I moaned softly grabbing his

hair. I wasn't going to make noise because I know my daughter is in the house and she's in her room. Siyavuya inserted his finger. I moaned softly as he walked up to me. We shared a passionate kiss with him finger fucking me...

- 
- 

The past few days has been nothing but the worst. My daughter isn't talking with anyone at the moment. She has been quiet and I hate it. Even with Siyavuya by her side. She's always quiet and doesn't say anything. I'm basically worried about her. I made it a point that I call my mother so she can talk to her. She was mad when I called her and told her about Mandisa's situation. She said I should have told her the same

day. I just didn't think it was going to be that important. My mom got in the house. She looked at me then rolled her eyes.

Mom: mnqundu

- Asshole

Me: uzahamba ke sisi apha

- You will leave here

Mom: whatever. Your house is so amazing

Me: thank you

Mom: where is she?

Me: she's in her room

Mom: let me have a glass of wine firstly before talking to her

Me: okay you will find me in my room. I'm currently busy with my work

Mom: okay

I kissed her forehead then I headed upstairs to my room. I sat on my bed then took my laptop. I continued working on my project. It was very important and it needed my main focus.

## TWENTY THREE

I decided to take a break after an hour working nonstop. I headed downstairs to the kitchen to make myself something to eat. I made myself a cheese sandwich with red wine on the side. I sat on top of the kitchen counter and had those while busy on my phone. I saw my mom and my daughter coming downstairs. My daughter had her school bag on her back. I looked at my mom confused. I got off the kitchen counter as my mom got to me with my daughter. I was confused wondering what's wrong. Why is my daughter with her school bag? My mom sighed looking at me.

Me: mom what's going on? Baby why do you have your school bag with you?



Mandisa: can I have the car keys? I'll wait for you there

Me: wait... What's happening here? Where is she going?

Mom: she's coming to stay with me and your father

Me: no, my daughter is not going anywhere. Baby go back to your room

Mandisa: makhulu ndcela itixi zemoto?

- Granny can I please have the car keys

Mom gave her the car keys. My daughter walked out. I looked at my mom wanting answers.

Me: mom what's going on?

Mom: your daughter will come back next month?

Me: why? What's wrong?

Mom: I talked with your daughter. She didn't tell me exactly what I wanted to know. She just told me what you also told me. So I made it a point that she comes with me because I want to take her to a therapist session starting from tomorrow. Your daughter is not okay. I can't have her like that. I want my old granddaughter. Your daughter is somehow bottling things up. She's not supposed to do that. I'm sorry I made a decision of taking your daughter just like that

Me: you could have spoke with me though

Mom: I know baby and I'm sorry for that. Just that your daughter needs help

Me: it's fine mom

Mom: did you tell Melusi?

Me: no I didn't tell him

Mom: why? He needs to know what's wrong with his daughter. Just because he did you bad that doesn't mean you shouldn't address anything to him especially when it comes to his daughter also. Maybe your daughter wants to talk to his father. Please call him

Me: I won't call him

Mom: just give me his numbers. I will call him myself

I took out my phone then went through my contact list. I gave my mom my phone. She typed Melusi's number then dialled his number. My mom had put the phone on speaker. Melusi answered the phone after

some time. My mom looked at me. I just shrugged my shoulders looking at her.

Mom: Melusi

Melusi: hello who am I speaking to?

My mom chuckled softly. I shook my head smiling.

Mom: ungu mnqundu womtu yazi Melusi

- You're such an asshole Melusi

I laughed looking at my mom. She chuckled looking at me.

Me: mom just speak. I know you want to be out of here

Melusi: Simyolisiwe?

Me: sure dude what's up?

Melusi: I should be asking you that but then I'm good. I'm just healing that's all

Me: you will be okay don't worry. Just so you know I won't shoot you

Melusi: thank you for that

Me: okay

Mom: why haven't you seen your daughter yet? I mean it has been three weeks entlek it has been a month. Why don't you come here and see her?

Melusi: your daughter really did a number on me. I don't want my daughter to see me the way I am

Mom: even if you're ugly you should see your daughter. What you're telling me right now is bullshit yandiva?

- You hear me?

Melusi. I hear you but...

My mom interrupted him.

Mom: come to my daughter's house now. I'm giving you 10 minutes and you better be here otherwise we're gonna have a problem

Melusi: I'm at the hospital now

Mom: do I look like I care? You better be here otherwise they'll be consequences done

Melusi: okay I'm coming

Mom: you were gonna come whether you like it or not

I laughed looking at my mom. Melusi chuckled over the phone softly. My mom disconnected the phone. Mandisa came back inside the house. She looked at her grandmother squinting her eyes.

Mandisa: are we still leaving or what?

Mom: don't talk to me like that. Andyo ntanga yakho uthetha nami olo hlobo yandiva?

- I'm not your mate that you talk to me that way, you hear me?

Mandisa: uxolo makhulu?

- I'm sorry grandma

Mom: it's fine we're waiting for someone. We're still going though

Me: I'm also leaving I'll be back next month

Mom: where are you going?

Me: I'm going to Cape Town

Mom: with Siyavuya?

Me: alone actually but I will be back

Mom: if I didn't come and decide on taking your daughter away from you would you

have told me you're leaving? And where was Mandisa going to be at?

Me: I was gonna tell you but then you came to the rescue and I appreciate you doing that for me mom

My mom clicked her tongue looking at me. My daughter laughed looking at my mom. I smiled looking at her. I was literally happy to see her smiling after so long. She looked beautiful and I loved what I was seeing after so long.

- 

Melusi was 30 minutes late and my mom was already impatient. She wanted to be out of my house and be with her husband. I understood her frustration. I had already packed my clothes. I mean I'm leaving tomorrow. Melusi got inside the house. He



looked so awful. I laughed looking at him. He sat next to mom. I still laughed looking at him. I never thought he looked like that. Wow I sure did a number on him. I even had tears coming out of my eyes.

Mom: yandbore.a shame

- You bore me shame

Me: I'm sorry. You look awful

Melusi: thank you

I shook my head smiling. Mandisa walked down the stairs. She walked up to us. She didn't notice Melusi. I could tell.

Mandisa: ndfuna uhamba mna

- I want to leave

Mom: here's your father

Mandisa: where... Ohh you look different

She said that as she looked at Melusi. She was literally surprised on seeing Melusi that way.

Mandisa: what happened to you?

Melusi: your mother had beaten me

Mandisa: what did you do? My mom wouldn't just beat you up if you didn't do anything to her. So what did you do to her?

Melusi: it's adult things

Mandisa: whatever that you did to her making her beat you up like this — you deserve it if it's wrong but if not then I'm sorry

Melusi: it's fine baby

I looked at my daughter smiling. This was actually beautiful. I never heard my

daughter speaking like that but it sure did something to me.

## TWENTY FOUR

My mom and my daughter literally just left not so long ago. Melusi decided to stay for a little bit because he wanted to talk to me. I didn't want him to stay behind but since he mentioned that he wanted to talk to me I just let him be. Melusi looked at me after rubbing his hands together.

Melusi: look Simyolisiwe I'm so sorry for what I did to you. I don't know why I did what I did to you. I should have accepted the fact that you didn't want me. I should have left you all alone with your friend but I became selfish enough having for me to drug you. I touched you without your approval. I was selfish enough to do that. I should have just left you alone but I took an advantage of having sex with you —

actually I raped you then I made you pregnant. I never thought you were going to get pregnant because I thought you were going to get the morning after pill since I lied to you about us having sex while you were out but you didn't actually get the pill. I just wanted to apologize to you because what you literally did to me made me somehow regret everything I did to you. Even if you don't forgive me it's fine but just know that I'm very sorry for what I did to you. I don't expect you to forgive me that easily but I just wanted you to know that's all I can say. I don't have anything else to say but only by apologizing to you that's all He stood up from his sit then looked at me. He offered me his hand. I just looked at it

then got up from my sit and looked at Melusi.

Me: look I forgive you not because of my daughter because of my own sanity. I already did what was good to you and I never thought you were going to apologize. I appreciate you apologizing to me not to mention being sincere about this. I forgive you

Melusi: you seriously forgive me?

Me: yes and please don't be afraid of me because of what I did to you. You should come see your daughter. You heard what my mom said to you and I hope you abide by it okay?

Melusi: I will don't worry. And thank you for forgiving me

Me: it's fine. We're cool now right?

Melusi: yes we are cool

Someone got inside my house. Melusi looked at me. I just shrugged my shoulders. Siyavuya appeared looking handsome. He looked at me raising my eyebrow. I shook my head smiling.

Melusi: let me leave you two. Goodbye and thank you

We shared a hug then I nodded already waving at him. Melusi walked out of the house.

Siyavuya: what was your boyfriend doing here?

Me: really? Mxm

Siyavuya laughed looking at me. I just clicked my tongue looking at him going

upstairs to my room. I threw myself in bed.  
Siyavuya laid next to me.

Siyavuya: baby

I looked at him.

Siyavuya: do you have something to tell me?

Me: like what?

Siyavuya: I don't know you tell me. I mean you're the only person who knows

Me: is it about Mandisa's father?

Siyavuya: and also that

Me: what do you mean?

Siyavuya: why are you leaving?

Me: you went through my personal things?



Siyavuya: no I didn't. I saw your ticket few days ago here on this bed. Were you even going to tell me that you'll be leaving?

Me: yes I was

Siyavuya: you're lying because tomorrow you're leaving. You were planning on not telling me at all. Why? I thought communication is the key so what happened to that?

Me: nothing happened to it. Just that I didn't know how I was going to break it down for you because I know how you are. Just that I didn't tell you because I will be at Cape Town for a month. It's very important for me to go there

Siyavuya: what are you going to do there?

Me: I will be just there for business purposes with Mr Khoza

Siyavuya: Ohhh.... Okay but you should have told me

Me: I know and I'm sorry I didn't tell you earlier. Just that I was afraid

Siyavuya: I can only forgive you with one thing that's all

Me: what is it?

Siyavuya looked at me biting his lip. I got off the bed and folded my hands looking at him.

Me: no hell no. I don't want to be intimate with you now maybe when I come back

Siyavuya: I won't even beg you mna. I want to have you before you leave

Me: but baby...

He interrupted me by coming close to me. I looked at him in his eyes.

Siyavuya: no buts you owe me

He said that already starting to kiss me. I sighed taking my dress off. Siyavuya looked at me weirdly. I laughed looking at him. He carried me then we both shared a passionate kiss. He laid me nicely on the bed as he stripped down naked. He got on top of me then we shared a passionate kiss with him rubbing my pussy and while I did a hand job to him with us both moaning softly. I flipped us over. I got on top of Siyavuya. I positioned myself then I moaned softly as the dick slid nicely on my pussy. I started moving my body slowly with Siyavuya squeezing my breasts having for the both of us to moan softly looking at

each other. Siyavuya moved his hands to my waist. He squeezed me. I moaned softly as I increased my pace with his help. My orgasms started building up. Siyavuya held me then he fucked me hard from underneath. I moaned softly as I squirm on him laying on his chest. We both shared a passionate kiss then I got flipped. He made me bend over then he slammed inside of me hard without warning me. I moaned softly biting my lower lip.

- 
- 
- 

## ONE MONTH LATER

Mr Khoza walked up to me. He was with someone. I couldn't see that person

because he was looking down the entire time. God knows why he was doing that. I wanted to know who it was.

Mr Khoza: Miss Nxubo

Me: Mr Khoza

Mr Khoza: I'd love for you to meet my son. Aybo kwedini zthini ngawe waba shy uyi gintsa njena. Andikwazi unjena mna sundqela ubuke lomtu endiku introduce. a kuye

- Aybo dude what's going on with you being shy while you're a gangster. I don't know you this way don't infuriate me and look at the person I'm introducing you too

I laughed looking at Mr Khoza. He was serious pulling his son's ear.

Him: yhoo tata yandhlaza

- Yhoo dad you're embarrassing me

I know this voice. I walked up close to this guy. I lifted his chin up and I was met up with Banele. He looked at me smiling.

Banele: surprise

I slapped him. Everyone gasped in air. I gave Banele a tight hug. He hugged me back chuckling. I'm happy to see Banele but at the same time I'm mad at him for not getting back at me for months I can say.

Mr Khoza: you guys know each other?

We both nodded looking at him.

Mr Khoza: that's why he was acting that way because he saw you

Me: imagine and I'm mad at him

Banele: I'm so sorry but remember what I've promised you

Me: no I don't

Banele: let's go so you can see the surprise I have for you

Me: okay then

Banele: come dude

Mr Khoza: voetsek

We laughed looking at Mr Khoza. He clicked his tongue leading the way. We walked out to the front. Banele blind folded me. I was even scared to walk because this person was so impatient telling me to hurry up. I was wearing heels and I couldn't afford falling on the ground because of Banele. Awaaa andvumi. (No I don't agree)

Me: ayy mna ndiniwe asifiki?

- I'm tired aren't we arriving?

Banele: stop!

I stopped and I tried to take off the blind fold but I was held.

Mr Khoza: you're so impatient

Me: I've been in this blind fold for like 5 minutes and I hate it

They both laughed. Banele took out the blind fold. I rubbed my eyes them opened them. I was met up by a car. It was a Range Rover. I opened my eyes wide after being frozen for like 2 minutes. I screamed out loud jumping up and down with my heels. Banele and his father looked at me laughing. I threw myself on Banele. He caught me. Tears streamed down my face uncontrollable as I hid my face. Banele



embroidered me in his arms. He chuckled softly wiping my tears.

Banele: you're such a cry baby

Me: fuck you

We all laughed. I just couldn't believe my eyes that's all.

Me: you really bought it

Banele: I may be a gangster but I have a good heart

Me: I can see that

Banele: I'm sorry for being a bad friend

Me: it's fine. How are things between you two?

Banele: we're good. We're still friends though. She doesn't want to rush things

Mr Khoza: who is that?

Me: his personal assistant

Mr Khoza: you're in love with your personal assistant?

Banele: something like that dad but we're friends for now because she's afraid of me

Mr Khoza: I hear you attentively. Let me leave you both

Me: bye Mr Khoza

He nodded then went back inside the building. Banele gave me the car keys. I smiled looking at him. I opened the car then made my way to it. Banele shook his head smiling looking at me.

- 

My phone rang as I got out of my car. I was home. I was fetching my daughter. I missed her and everyone else. I looked at the caller

ID it was Khanyisile. It has been ages we last spoke to each other. I'm such a bad friend. I answered the phone going to the house.

Khanyi: I don't know but I feel like you're not my friend

Me: I know I'm a bad friend but honestly speaking I have been busy with having to deal with my daughter then his father, my family, my business and my friends. I was busy and I forgot about you. I'm sorry for that. I'm really sorry you have to forgive me I heard her sigh.

Khanyi: it's fine but I want to see you

Me: ohh... Okay when?

Khanyi: tomorrow if it's possible. I want to talk to you about something with you

Me: what is it about?

She chuckled. I smiled shaking my head knowing what is it about.

Khanyi: I will tell you tomorrow

Me: okay then

Khanyi: good bye then

Me: good bye baby

She disconnected the phone after saying that. I got inside the house then headed to the lounge. I found everyone seated on the lounge watching a movie.

Me: good afternoon guys

They all looked at me. My daughter ran up to me and threw herself on me. She has grown in such a short period of time. I hugged her tight then gave her a peck.

Me: what have you been feeding my daughter?

They all laughed looking at me.

Mandisa: you look so beautiful

Me: and you look extremely gorgeous baby

Mandisa: thank you mom

Me: I came to fetch my daughter. I missed her so bad

Dad: take her please she has been troubling me so much

Mandisa: grandpa

We all laughed looking at my dad.

Dad: I'm serious. I love you but you're a troublesome

Mandisa: okay grandpa it's fine

My daughter walked upstairs to fetch her belongings. I hugged my mom and dad

before taking my sit. I laid my head on my  
dad's shoulder watching TV.

## TWENTY FIVE

I just got home with my daughter. We stayed for an hour at home. We were talking about my trip. I have to say despite everything that has happened I needed to be out of here away from home. I just needed this break and Mr Khoza made things to be more relaxing for me. I appreciate what he actually did for me. My mom and dad were surprised with the car I was driving. I mean it's a present from my friend and it's extremely beautiful. My daughter ran to her room as we got to my house. I shook my head smiling. A knock came on the door as I was about to pour myself a glass of wine. I went to attend it. It was Siyavuya. He hugged me tight. I smiled hugging him back giggling. He broke the hug

after some time. We shared a passionate kiss with him grabbing my ass. I laughed pulling out. I see he missed me so much. I won't lie to myself but I also missed him so bad. I mean it has been a month without seeing each other. We headed to the kitchen. I drank my glass of wine.

Siyavuya: you look so beautiful

I shook my head smiling looking at him.

Me: you're so weird but then thank you so much

Siyavuya: who's car is it that is outside?

Me: that's my car actually

Siyavuya: not unless there's someone here that's not your car

Me: it's my car. It was a present for me



Siyavuya: who would present you a Range Rover? I mean this car is so expensive

Me: it was Banele. He once promised me that he was going to buy me a Range Rover because I asked for it. So yes yesterday he was with his father and he gifted me that car in a way of him apologizing for being a bad friend and that he owes me obviously so yeah it's that way

Siyavuya: wow that's amazing to hear

I shook my head smiling.

Me: you're okay?

Siyavuya: yes I am. Just that I missed you that's all. I don't know but you look different. You have gained and you're more light skinned. You even got a tummy

Me: you're trying to say that I'm fat and I don't look attractive?

Siyavuya: no baby I didn't say that

Me: what is it that you're trying to say?

Siyavuya: are we fighting? I just said what I said because I'm seeing that right now. You look different that's all and you being fat and not being attractive I didn't say that. I don't understand why you're mad right now but anyone can confirm what I just said to you. You should have just said — am I really that way or you should have just said I didn't notice that's all. But no you decided to say something I didn't even think of saying to you. Even if you were getting fat I would still be with you despite everything. Even if you were ugly and not attractive I would have still loved you the same way. I

wouldn't have loved any less. You know that I love you. I wouldn't have done what I did months back if I didn't love you but now you're just being selfish enough to make me look like a bad person while I ain't that type of person. I don't know but it seems like I should leave you alone for a little bit to get your senses together because it seems like I messed things up. That doesn't mean I'm getting out of this house. I'm going to see my daughter so I will see you after spending time with Mandisa

I wiped my tears as Siyavuya walked upstairs. I closed my eyes after realising that I was wrong. I shouldn't have assumed otherwise but I did.

- 
-

Siyavuya walked downstairs after some time as I was making myself something to eat. I had a bite of my egg sandwich. I had the urge to vomit. I quickly ran to the sink. I vomited in there. I felt someone holding my hair. Tears streamed down my face. I wiped my tears then I washed my mouth. I cleaned the sink after some time. Siyavuya looked at me worried.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

Me: I don't know but yes I'm fine now. I don't know what made me vomit because I was just having my sandwich with eggs and I just vomited just like that

Siyavuya: is it the first time this happened to you?

I nodded drinking my glass of wine.

Siyavuya: might be that you're sick or something I don't know

Me: I'm okay. I'll be okay

Siyavuya: I'm leaving. I have to be home my family needs me

Me: ohh... Okay. When are you coming back?

He chuckled looking at me.

Siyavuya: I'm just going to check everyone then come back. I won't be staying there for a specific reason

Me: I thought...

Siyavuya: you thought bullshit

He said that by interrupting me. I looked at him squinting my eyes. He pulled me close to him. He gave me a peck and looked at me smiling squeezing my ass.

Siyavuya: do you have some to say to me before I go?

I sighed looking at him.

Me: I'm so sorry for how I was. I'm sorry for making you a bad person while you were just saying something that was pretty evident. It all just came out in an unexpected way. I'm really sorry I talked to you like that and also by getting mad at you for absolutely nothing. I'm really sorry my love

He looked at me smiling. He gave me a peck then he wiped my tears on both of my eyes. I looked at Siyavuya.

Siyavuya: I forgive you don't worry. Look I hate to make things end now but I have to go. I will be back before you know it

Me: okay

Siyavuya: you know that I love you right?

I nodded looking at Siyavuya. He looked at me squinting his eyes. I laughed looking at him... but I was stopped by Siyavuya kissing me. I kissed him back holding him tight

## TWENTY SIX

I was at Spurs waiting for Khanyisile. She called me yesterday and asked to meet up with me. I obviously had to meet up with her. I didn't have any choice. I had to listen to what she has to say to me then giving her the advice that she needs because it seems like she's going to need that. I had left my daughter with Siyavuya. He didn't go to work because he's tired. I don't blame him. I'm also tired but here I am meeting up with Khanyisile. The way we missed each other we literally had to make love for hours. I won't complain but say that I missed it so much especially being in Siyavuya's arms. When I get done with Khanyisile I'm definitely spending more quality time with my man. I was having some ribs because I



was so hungry. I couldn't wait for Khanyisile to appear so we can eat together. I was just so hungry. Khanyisile appeared after some time. She looked beautiful with her flower dress. She ran her eyes around and finally found me. She walked up to me panting heavily. I looked at her squinting my eyes having my ribs.

Khanyi: I'm so sorry I'm late. Just that my grandmother wanted me to do the dishes because my siblings ran off at home. I don't know why. I hope I didn't make you wait that longer

Me: no you didn't actually

Khanyi: but you're already having your food

Me: I just got hungry that's why. I couldn't wait any longer mna

She laughed looking at me. I shook my head smiling calling over the waiter. The waiter ran off to the kitchen and came back with Khanyisile's food. She looked at me surprised. I shook my head smiling looking at her.

Khanyi: thank you but you didn't have to buy me anything

Me: just eat please and tell me something I don't know

She giggled drinking her water before looking at me.

Khanyi: I need a favour from you

Me: what is it?

Khanyi: well someone wants to take me out for a weekend getaway just so we can know each other more. Obviously at first I told

this person I won't be able to go because of my grandmother. I mean she knows very well that I never had friends nor boyfriends. I just hid it from her. So this person gave me a week to think about it and now I did. I want to go now even though I'm afraid. So this is where you come in. I don't want to obviously tell my grandmother that I will be going away with a guy. I want you to come meet my grandmother and tell her that you'll be taking me out or I will be doing a sleepover at your house something like that please. I know it will feel like I'm using you or anything like that but please I need to go out with this person. I just want to know his intentions with him wanting to be with me

Me: who are we talking about?

Khanyi: please don't tell anyone about this until it's obviously confirmed

Me: why would I tell anyone? Don't you trust me? I'm not that type of person actually

Khanyi: I'm sorry I thought you would literally tell the others that I don't know off

Me: you just need to stop assuming things. I'm not that type of person. You just need to know that. I'm your friend for a specific reason

Khanyi: I'm sorry again

Me: it's fine so tell me who is it?

Khanyi: it's actually my boss. I still don't know his name but yeah you've seen him

Me: I think I remember him. The guy loves you?

Khanyi: yes I think so. It just came out as a surprise to me because I never thought he would love someone like me. I mean like I ain't like the others but I guess I'm different in my own way for him to actually love me. I don't know but I kind of like him but I'm scared of him at the same time

Me: why are you scared of him? I mean this guy is so handsome. There's nothing for you to be scared of him. Not unless he did something really bad for you to actually be scared of him. I mean he wouldn't consider doing something bad

Khanyi: he actually did something that had me to actually witness him doing and that's why I've been scared of him until this very day

Me: what did he do? Why does it seems like you don't want to tell me what is it that he did? Are you protecting him from something?

Khanyi: I'm just scared he might hurt me because I told someone about what is it that he does

Me: do you really think he will hurt someone he loves?

Khanyi: no I don't think so

Me: then tell me already because right now you're getting me frustrated

She chuckled looking at me.

Khanyi: well in months of me working for him I actually witnessed him killing someone at the place I work at. I don't know why I didn't go home early but I had

to finish off something for me having to witness my boss killing someone. I wanted something from him. So I thought to myself why not go to him and ask him. So I went to his office and I opened the door without knocking. With me opening the door a gun shot went off then the person fell on the ground. I don't know but I think I screamed having for everyone inside to look at me. I ran to my office petrified and scared. I wanted to be home already. My boss got in my office he threatened me that if I tell anyone about what I've witnessed he will kill me and my family. I obviously didn't tell anyone. So yeah I've been scared of him until this very day. I just can't get it off my head. I know it happened long time ago but it just scares me that one day he might

decide on wanting to kill me because I left him for someone else or having for him to kill that person because he fell in love with me and I did the very same thing. I'm just scared it might get to that point actually I shook my head smiling.

Me: you just need to stop assuming things that hasn't currently happened to you. Yes you've witnessed him killing someone but do you really think he's that wicked having for him to kill you because of something?

She shook her head looking at me.

Me: just give this a try and see how things are going to be like that's all I can say to you

She sighed before nodding looking at me.

She ate her ribs before having to ask me about how I have been the past few



months. I obviously told her everything. I didn't leave out anything.

## TWENTY SEVEN

I had bought grocery for Khanyisile's family. I just did it because I wanted to do it not to mention because we were already at the mall. Obviously Khanyisile didn't want me to buy grocery for them. I didn't listen to her for a specific reason and I didn't want us to fight about this. I even asked Khanyisile to tell me everyone's size on their bodies and their shoe sizes. She cried not believing that I was literally doing this for her and her family. She was so happy and so was I. I had to comfort her having for me to also shed a tear. It was just so emotional. She finally had calmed down and told me everyone's size. I bought them some few clothes. They didn't cost me that much. I was actually happy that I was doing

this. I was now driving back Khanyisile back home. My phone rang as I was getting closer to Khanyisile's home. I looked at the caller ID. It was Banele. I squinted my eyes wondering what's wrong and what is it that Banele wants.

Me: can you please answer the phone and put it on my ear?

Khanyisile answered the phone then did what I told her.

Me: what do you want dude? I'm driving here. Do you want me to cause an accident?

He laughed. I clicked my tongue chuckling.

Me: you bore me lover boy

Banele: I'm so sorry babes

Me: why are you calling me?

Banele: where the hell are you going?

Me: why are you asking me that?

Banele: because here in my phone it states that you're going to a direction I don't know and obviously you don't also know it because it's your first time going there

Me: wait a minute how do you know?

Banele: I just know

Me: Banele don't make me mad. Did you put a tracker on my fucking car?

Banele: yes I did

Me: yes I do admit you bought this car but you didn't have any right whatsoever to put a fucking tracker on my fucking car BANELE KHOZA! I see you want me to beat the fuck out of you and I will eventually do that. I ain't scared of you like the person you love

you hear me? You will remove this tracker and if you don't I will tell the person you love to not go with you anymore

Banele: how do you know about me going out with Khanyisile?

Me: she told me actually

Banele: so you're with her now?

Me: yes you want to talk to her?

Banele: of course I do but I will call her later on

Khanyi: we have arrived home

Me: bye dude

Banele: bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. We got out of the house and the neighbours were outside already looking at

us. I opened the boot then took out all the grocery and the shopping plastic bags.

Khanyisile called out her siblings. They got out of the house with their grandmother. I already knew their names. They both looked so much like their big sister. They walked over at us.

Them: sawbona

- Good day

Me: hey you both actually look like your big sister right here

Thabiso: kancinci yhoo

- Just a little a bit

We all laughed.

Thandiwe: I'm Thandiwe bese wena?

- And you?

Khanyi's grandma: Thandi!

Thandiwe: xolo makhulu

- I'm sorry grandma

Khanyi's grandma: unjani mtanami?

- How are you my child?

Me: ndiphilile makhulu wena?

- I'm doing good grandma and you?

Khanyi's grandma: ndiphilile andikwazi mna

- I'm doing good. I don't know you

Me: I'm Simyolisiwe Nxubo ichommie yomtanakho

- Your daughter's friend

Thandiwe: une chommie wena?

- You have a friend?

Khanyi: yambona nawe

- You can see her

Thandiwe: akamhle

- She's so beautiful

Me: thank you

My phone rang. I looked at the caller ID. It was Siyavuya. I sighed answering the phone.

Me: sthandwa sami

- My love

Siyavuya: where are you? You've been gone for so long

Me: where's my daughter?

Siyavuya: she's sleeping

Me: I will be home in no time just be patient and stop being a cry baby. I'm still busy with something here



Siyavuya: okay my love. I will see you in no time then

Me: okay baby bye

Siyavuya: whatever

I disconnected the phone laughing. I noticed that everyone was looking at me.

Me: I'm so sorry. Look I bought you guys grocery it's gonna last you guys for some time and I also bought you guys clothes not to mention shoes. They didn't cost that much but then here's a little something that you might spoil yourself with

I took out my purse then I took out the two hundreds I had. I counted the money then I gave grandma the money. She hugged me before taking the money from me and hiding it from everyone else.

Me: take everything inside I have to get back to my daughter

Khanyi's grandma: may God bless you with what you literally just did for us. This is actually beautiful

Me: it's nothing. Just keep safe please

She nodded hugging me. I bid my goodbyes to everyone then I drove off back to my house so happy with having to witness everything.

- 

I found Siyavuya watching TV. I took off my dress then I walked up to Siyavuya. I got on top of him. He startled holding me bringing me closer to him. He covered the both of us with a fleece. He didn't want Mandisa to see me naked.

Siyavuya: how did everything go?

He asked as he rubbed my clit. I moaned softly as I grab held Siyavuya's biceps. He shifted my panty to the side then he inserted himself inside of me. I moaned softly grabbing his hair.

Siyavuya: baby I asked you a question

Me: ohh baby I can't

He started increasing his pace rubbing my clit. We shared a passionate kiss. I didn't want us to talk anymore. I wanted us to make love. I just couldn't do both talking and us making love at the same time. I made Siyavuya lie on his back. I started moving slowly but Siyavuya grabbed my ass and started increasing his pace making me lay on top of him biting his lower lip I was avoiding having to moan louder.

## TWENTY EIGHT

THREE WEEKS LATER...

The timer on my phone went off after two minutes of waiting. I took one of the pregnancy test on the side of the basin. I first hesitated to take the pregnancy test but thought to myself I had to know if whether I was pregnant or not. The reason I'm doing a pregnancy test is because I haven't been feeling okay for some time. I just don't get it why. I wasn't able to do anything at all. I had to leave my personal assistant in charge. I wasn't able to do anything at all. I'm always tired. I sleep a lot and I become late at work every day. Everything smells awful to me especially when it comes to eggs. When I have eggs I always vomit them. I just don't get it why

because I love eggs so much. Not to mention the fact that I always eat a lot. An hour doesn't pass without me having anything to eat at all. I'm just always hungry. I'm always moody not wanting to do anything. I'm always shouting and my daughter hates it not to mention Siyavuya. They would ask me if I'm okay and I wouldn't be able to answer them because I wouldn't know why I'm literally like that out of the blue. I had Googled why I'm acting this way and obviously the Google said that I'm pregnant and I don't think I am. I'm just not ready to have another child as yet. I know Mandisa is old enough but I just to settle down with Siyavuya first before having another child. I just want that, that's all. A knock went on my room. I quickly hid

the pregnancy test then I walked out of the ensuite. I fixed myself then I unlocked the door. It was Siyavuya. He looked at me squinting his eyes. I let him inside the room.

Siyavuya: baby are you okay?

I nodded smiling looking at him. He gave me a peck before sitting on the bed. I sat next to him.

Siyavuya: I need a favour

Me: sure what is it?

Siyavuya: wait give me a minute I will be back

He headed to the ensuite. I sighed laying on the bed. I closed my eyes taking a deep breath. I wonder what is it that Siyavuya wants. My phone rang. I quickly got off the bed then I took my phone. I looked at the

caller ID it was my biological mother. I sighed wondering what's going on and why is she calling me now after so many months. I answered the phone sitting on the bed.

Me: what can I do for you?

Naledi: I need a favour from you

Me: what is it?

I heard her sigh over the phone.

Naledi: I desperately need some money

Me: from who? Me? Are you seriously asking me? You're asking the wrong person. You should ask your two kids. Remember you guys chose to chase me away from my own home when I was 18 because I was pregnant now I don't get it why you're asking money from me. The last time I remember you have two children and I have

my own parents who have been there for me when I was pregnant and who were able to pay for everything for me. You know who you should ask money from

Naledi: but we apologized for what we did to you

Me: and I forgave you guys for the sake of my daughter. That doesn't mean you should ask anything from me and I mean anything at all. So what you're asking from me right now you won't get it at all. I worked hard for this money I have for me and my daughter. I won't let my money go to waste especially on other people. I'm sorry but I won't be able to help you just ask your children or make a plan

Naledi: please I'm begging you Simyolisiwe. I'm really desperate apha



Me: wasn't I also desperate asking you guys to not kick me out because I'm too young and I don't know anything about life outside? Wasn't I also desperate when you packed my entire clothes in a black rubbish removal bag? Wasn't I also desperate when you guys forced me out of the house embarrassing me in front of everyone? Y'all were ashamed of having a daughter who got pregnant at 18 years old. Now you're the one desperate while I was also desperate asking you guys to not be that way years ago. It doesn't work that way Naledi. Make a plan ask for a loan then pay it back. I'm sorry but I won't be able to help you

Naledi: it's okay I understand

Me: thank you. Is that all?

Naledi: yes

Me: okay bye

Naledi: bye

I disconnected the phone after she said that. I sighed sitting up straight. I don't know but after what I've said I was relieved that I was able to say it even though it made me feel somehow hurtful. But I'm glad I was able to say it. Siyavuya walked out of the ensuite after some time of him being there. He looked at me without saying anything. I shrugged my shoulders looking at him.

Me: baby what is it?

Siyavuya: I don't know you tell me what's going on

I looked at him confused.

Me: the last time I checked you said you wanted me to do a favour for you before you walked in the ensuite. Now I don't understand why are you saying that I should tell you what's happening because I don't know anything at all not unless we're talking about me talking with my biological mother not so long ago

Siyavuya: when were you going to tell me?

I looked at him confused before he showed me three of the pregnancy test he had on his hand. I sighed looking at him.

Me: what are you talking about?

Siyavuya: Simyolisiwe I'm talking about these pregnancy tests I have with me what else would I be fucking talking about?

Please don't make me mad I'm asking you nicely

Me: I haven't even looked at the pregnancy tests because you knocked on the door so I hid those without me checking whether I'm pregnant or not. I don't know maybe you're asking me why I did the pregnancy test well I did it because I haven't been feeling well and I obviously had to Google why I'm feeling this way and the Google said that I was pregnant. I wanted to make sure by testing first before assuming I was then me having to decide if I keep the baby or not if I'm pregnant

Siyavuya: what? What did you say?

He threw the pregnancy tests at me on my thighs.

Siyavuya: you're not going to abort my child I looked at the pregnancy tests. I couldn't believe it. I was actually pregnant. All of the

three pregnancy tests were positive. They all had two lines. I was really pregnant.

Me: I'm not ready to have another child

Siyavuya: you can't abort my child and that's final

Me: ohh please this is my body I can do whatever I want to do with this body you cannot eventually tell me I can't abort because I'm going to do it. If it means us being over because of me doing it then let it be. I'm sorry but I ain't going to keep the baby

Siyavuya: you're not leaving. You'll not abort my child. Why are you doing this? This won't end well for you

Me: we'll see about that

I walked out of my room. Siyavuya pulled me inside the room. He locked the door then looked at me.

Siyavuya: why are you doing this?

Me: we're not yet exclusive. I can't have a child knowing very well at the end of the day you're going to end things with me. What if you're going to change up on me after I give birth with this baby I have? I don't want to assume things then they don't eventually happen at all. I'm sorry but I can't do this. It would have been better if you were my fiancé but we're still together as partners and I don't want that at all. I don't know but I think we should break up because I know eventually after me aborting you won't love me the same way because of what I'm going to do now. So

I'm sorry but we should go our separate ways

Siyavuya didn't say anything. He just walked out of the room. I went on my knees then I cried loudly. I know I may be heartless but I'm just having doubts about all of this. What if he's gonna change up on me after me giving birth? Why did I even get pregnant earlier.

## TWENTY NINE

FEW YEARS LATER...

I waiting for my kids to come downstairs because I was supposed to take them to school then I have to rush to the important function held by Mr Khoza himself.

Obviously Banele will be there as always and also with his beloved wife which is my friend Khanyisile. It took a lot of convincing for Khanyisile to marry Banele. She was scared of Banele and I completely understand why at some point. Banele was just so over protective against Khanyisile the past few years before they've dated and that what made them fight most of the time. Khanyisile didn't like any of that. She wanted Banele to just be normal and not bring up his overprotectiveness everywhere



especially if they're not together at all. It was hard for Banele for the whole two years but then four years ago they got in a relationship. They fought a lot of times and I had to be there for them even though I wasn't the cause of them fighting but then otherwise mna I ain't a bad friend but an amazing friend to the both of them. I really can't wait to see them. My kids are going to be fetched by Aqhamile because I know I won't be able to do it because I will be held up with Banele, Khanyisile and Mr Khoza so it's going to be highly impossible for me to just excuse myself just for 30 minutes. My babies came downstairs after some time. They already had their backpacks with them. I took my car keys then I walked out of the house with my kids. I locked the

house then I got in the car. I drove off to the kid's school with music playing on the car. My kids were just busy on their phones. I got them at their school after some time. I kissed their foreheads after giving them their pocket money. I drove off to where the function was held likely I knew where it was. I mean Banele told me before his father was about to tell me also. My phone rang as I was getting closer to the place. I couldn't be distracted. I didn't answer the phone. I got at the place after some time. I walked out with my dress. I didn't have time to dress up because of my children. I headed inside and the place was still set up. Khanyisile walked up to me. I laughed directing myself to the room I use most of the time when I'm here. She sat on the bed

as we got inside the room. I took off my dress and wore the one I had with me.

Khanyi: you and becoming late every time like you have a man in your life

Me: you know I have two kids so please don't do this to me now because you're married to my best friend

Khanyi: aren't I your best friend also?

Me: you weren't my best friend but yeah you are my best friend

She rolled her eyes looking at me. I shook my head smiling.

Khanyi: is Precious coming with his husband?

Me: yes they are coming. They will be here in no time

Khanyi: your siblings?

Me: I don't know dude. It's their choice if they come or not. Not unless your husband threatens them to come since they're scared of him

Khanyi: I don't like it when my husband becomes gangster ish and it's all because of you

Me: well I like him that way you seem to forget

Khanyi: ohh please fuck you

We both laughed. Banele got in the room. I know how he smells. I mean I've been friends with him for years.

Banele: you're so sexy

Me: are you serious dude?

Banele: yeah but I didn't get to see your body you see

Khanyi: don't fucking frustrate me especially on this day

Me: jealousy doesn't suit you

Banele: mxelele chommie

- Tell her friend

He said that acting girly. I'm used to him acting this way especially when we're in front of his wife. Khanyisile hates it when Banele becomes that way but it's actually cute and amazing.

Me: you know very well that he's not going anywhere you guys have been married for so long and you even guys have two beautiful kids together so please if he thinks of cheating on you I'm here I'll teach him a fucking good lesson

She smiled looking at me.

Banele: here's that beautiful smile

She blushed hiding her face. I shook my head smiling. A knock came on the door and that could only be Banele's father. He always knocks every time and I'm used to him being that way. He let himself looking handsome on his suit. I walked up to him and took his tie off. They had tied it wrong. I tied it correctly then I put it back to him.

Me: now you look handsome every woman is not going to be able to take their eyes off you because of me

Mr Khoza: what you're trying to say to me is that a tie attracts a woman?

Me: well... I don't know but a SCENT MADE ME attracted to someone actually love that person

Khanyi: you missed him?

My eyes started burning. I sat on the bed as tears streamed down my face. I wiped them nodding.

Me: I missed him so much and having for my son looking like him a little bit makes me miss his so much. I don't know why I was so stupid to break off things with him because I wanted to abort our child. I was so stupid and I didn't even think about this thoroughly so. I just missed him so much and I made him miss six years in his only first son. Mandisa is still okay I mean she has her own father. I don't even think my own daughter remember him. I mean now she's fifteen years old. I'm such a bad person

Banele: you're not a bad person just that you weren't in your right state of mind. I don't know but I think he will come back. I mean you guys loved each other so much it was pretty evident. You guys are going to find a way in each other's lives again. I'm 100% sure about this. Just enjoy this day that's all we are asking from you

I nodded looking at him smiling.

Me: thank you

Banele: we're friends for a reason

Me: we wouldn't be friends if it weren't for my siblings and us kissing each other same time seeing you

Khanyi: why don't I know about that?

Mr Khoza: me too

Me: yhoo iphume nge mistake



- It came out by mistake

Banele: it did. It all in the past let's go

Khanyi: BANELE KHOZA DON'T MAKE ME MAD?

Me: dala what you can thina we're out.

Asambe daddy I'm precisely everyone is already here waiting for you and we are giving you guys 10 minutes. You won't be having sex in here. This is my room

- Do what you can do we're out. Let's go daddy I'm precisely everyone is already here waiting for you and we are giving you guys 10 minutes

Banele looked at me smiling. I shook my head walking out with Mr Khoza. We headed downstairs to where everyone was. To my surprise the other Khoza's were

following me behind me. I smiled as we got down stairs. It was packed and everyone was there. I went to my position then I took my sit as the function began. Lot of speeches were said just for few minutes then the interaction between others began after some time. Other guys tried talking to me but I gave them my middle finger indicating the fact that I don't want to talk to them at all. As I was about to excuse myself to the room I use to make a phone call just to check on my babies. A familiar SCENT caught my nose. I looked around but not suspiciously so. I could sense that Siyavuya was here right next to me just that I couldn't see him. I got pulled by someone upstairs to my room. I asked myself why is this person pulling me like he knows me. I

could tell from masculine. We got to the room and the guy locked the door.

Me: who the hell do you think you are pulling me like that? No one pulls me like that

I said that already poking this person's chest with my pointing finger. This person held my finger then looked straight into my eyes. I suddenly felt surreal. I quickly got away from him. I sat down on the bed surprised as hell. Honestly speaking I never thought I was going to meet up with Siyavuya after so long. After he left me saying that I was going to abort immediately when I was pregnant. He left town and he blocked me everyone. I tried getting back to him but I couldn't because I didn't know where else was I going to find him. After a month of me

pregnant making me four months pregnant I wanted to do an abortion because Siyavuya didn't want anything to do with me and I brought that against the both of us. At the process of me having to abort my baby I thought about how Siyavuya loved Mandisa as his own. The way he loves children was so amazing and beautiful. It literally brought me in tears and I immediately stopped the whole process from happening. I apologized for the inconvenience and they understood. Months went by and I was alone in my pregnancy. Yes everyone was there for me but one person was missing which was Siyavuya. He had to be there through me getting pregnant and growing huge every month. Having for him to be by my side

when I do check ups. When I do the scans. When I do the photo shoot. When our baby had out first kick inside of me. When I was moody most of the time. When I was always hungry craving for shit. When we got to know the gender of our baby. When I gave birth. When we gave our son a name together. When we had to exchange changing his diaper and having for us to clean him up when he's a mess. When our baby started eating porridge in just five months. When our baby started sitting on their own. When our baby started crawling. When our baby started walking having to lean on other things having for him to take his first step yelling his first word which was mama. Having for us to always check him up if he didn't pee on the bed. Having for us

to witness him going to school for the first time. Like a lot of things with Silindokuhle but he wasn't there and I chased him away from that. Just as I said I'm a bad person. I'm selfish. Tears streamed down my face uncontrollable looking back at him again. He has completely changed and he looked amazing at all. He walked up to me with his face straight. He sat next to me then embraced me in his arms. I broke down more holding him tight. He kissed my forehead trying to calm me down.

## THIRTY

I calmed down after some time in Siyavuya's arms. He looked at me raising his eyebrow. He completely changed and I just have questions for him. I don't get it why he's back and after so long. He could have came back when Silindokuhle was a year or two but now it ain't that way. He came back when my baby is just six years. I don't know maybe he came for business purposes then he's gonna head back where he now resides. I mean he doesn't want anything to do with me. Siyavuya held both of my hands looking at me straight in my eyes.

Me: why are you here?

Siyavuya: you seem to forget we still work together. The last time I remember the contract I signed with you our didn't get

cancelled so technically I have to be wherever you are

Me: but why now? I mean it has been years you've been gone and it's all because of me. Look I'm really sorry about that day. I wasn't in the right state of mind. The pregnancy was just messing my mind up. I should have listened to you. I should have gave you the chance to be the father since it was your first time but I made things worse. I also shouldn't have broken things up with you. I just regret everything that has happened especially on that day. Can you please forgive me?

Siyavuya sighed looking at me. He walked his hand on my cheek and brought me close to him. My heart started pounding fast. Siyavuya smashed his lips on mine. I closed



my eyes as we shared a passionate kiss with Siyavuya walking his hand slowly on my neck. He tightened my neck. I held his hand feeling some type of way. I've never felt like this for a longest time. These were foreign feelings I was having and it has been so long. I pulled out moving Siyavuya's hand away from my neck. Our foreheads touched each other. A knock went on the door.

Siyavuya: I want to tell you something

Me: let me see who it is first. It might be important

Siyavuya: please listen to me

The knocking went on hard. I unlocked the door then I opened it. It was Khanyisile with Banele. They both looked at me weirdly before peeking their eyes inside my room.

They opened the door widely. I shook my head moving out their way.

Khanyi: who are you?

Siyavuya: hey I'm Siyavuya Mcunu

Khanyi: nice to meet you... Wait... Ohhh my God it's him?

I nodded looking at her.

Khanyi: you told him?

Me: I was about to tell him but you guys disturbed us so I couldn't do it but then what is it? What's wrong?

Banele: Mandisa has been calling nonstop

Me: what's wrong? What happened to them?

I asked them already panicking. I know when my daughter calls something is wrong

it's either her or something has happened to my son. So I panic a lot when it comes to them.

Banele: we don't know but I think this needs you

Me: where are they?

Banele: the principal took them to the hospital and I think it's getting worse. I think you should go with him because it contains him mostly. I mean we're talking about Silindokuhle here and it has been happening to him for years. It's time they meet up with each other and he should do the ceremony as soon as possible before something happens to your son

Siyavuya: what's happening here? You have a son?

Me: Siyavuya this is not the best time for us to fight we should leave. I can't lose my son and it won't happen anytime soon

Siyavuya: I have to talk to my ex wife first

Me: SHE CAN FUCKING WAIT MY SON NEEDS ME! THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU

I stomped out of the room then I walked downstairs. I excused myself heading to my car. I couldn't wait for anyone. I drove off to the hospital in high speed. I didn't care about the robots. I wanted to get to my son as soon as possible. I just won't be able to stand losing my son. I love him so much and he knows that. I got at the hospital after some time. I made my way inside then ran to the waiting room. I didn't want to waste my time talking to the receptionist. I found

my daughter Mandisa with the principal.  
The principal made his way to me.

Me: is my son okay?

Principal: the doctor hasn't said anything  
but then I was waiting for you to come. I  
wasn't going to leave your daughter by  
herself

Me: thank you for doing that

Principal: let me go back to school then. I  
hope he gets well

Me: I hope so too. What happened to him?

Principal: he had a seizure just as always

Me: thank you

He nodded then made his way out. I walked  
up to my daughter. She looked at me  
sniffing. I embraced her in my arms.

Mandisa: why does this keep on happening to him? I sensed something was wrong immediately when I walked to my school until I got called few hours later. I was told that Lindo was admitted to hospital so I had to ask at school to be written a pass out so I can come here. I tried calling you numerous times why weren't you answering your phone?

Me: I went over with you yesterday that I was going to be busy and I won't have time with my phone. I told you

Mandisa: I guess I forgot

I saw everyone coming over to us. My mom hugged me. I sighed looking at her. Siyavuya was also here with someone I don't know. It might be his ex wife. I never thought he got married. I guess he moved on quickly while

it was hard for me to do so. I don't have a say in this. I looked at her closely and my eyes landed on her huge tummy. She was pregnant. I noticed her looking at me. I smiled looking at her. She also did the same thing to me.

Mom: did you tell him?

Me: no I haven't told him

Mom: Siyavuya come here

He got closer to the both of us.

Mom: tell him. I know he might get mad at you but at some point you weren't in your right state of mind

I sighed holding back my tears.

Me: you know that few years I was pregnant with your child right?

Siyavuya: yes the child you've aborted because you didn't want to keep because we weren't exclusive just as you said. What about that?

Me: well I was three months pregnant when I found out. After a month I went to the hospital because I wanted to abort the child because you had literally cut me off your life. You deleted my number and blocked me on all of the social media platforms. I couldn't find you anywhere and it was frustrating me because I knew you wanted nothing to do with me because of me being a selfish person. Well when I was in the process of aborting our child. I cried imagining the love that you gave my daughter. You literally took Mandisa as your own. I mean no one would have literally



done that but just leave me. I just thought all about the beautiful things you did for her. So I couldn't abort my child anymore. I stopped everything but it was too late. You were already gone. There's nothing I would have done. I had a son and named him Silindokuhle. He is your first son. I'm sorry you had to miss six years of your life not having to witness Silindokuhle growing up having to look like you a little bit

Siyavuya looked at me with tears in his eyes. He chuckled looking at me. He stood up and I knew what he was going to do. I wasn't going to let him go anymore just as he did six years ago.

Me: you can't run away just like you did the last time. My son — I mean your son, our son needs you and you're already here. You

can't do what you did the last time. If it means you being mad at me then let it be but you're not going anywhere because someone needs you

Siyavuya looked at me then back to his ex wife.

Her: it's fine. I will call my husband

Siyavuya: thank you

Her: good bye everyone

Us: good bye

She walked away after we said that.

Mandisa looked at Siyavuya squinting her eyes.

Me: intoni?

- What is it?

Mandisa: ndyamazela yazi mama

- I know him from somewhere you know  
mom

Me: you actually do know him just that it  
has been 6 years you haven't seen him

Mandisa: he's the one on your wallpaper  
when I was 8?

I nodded looking at her.

Mandisa: yhoo and why did you leave me if  
I may ask?

Me: this isn't about you baby

Mandisa: now it is because the last time I  
remember he was my best friend. I  
remember mom everything

Me: okay girlfriend I hear you

Everyone laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: can I talk to you?

Me: ohh okay. We can go outside

He nodded. I followed him out of the hospital to the parking lot. We got inside his car.

Me: so you moved on

Siyavuya: you left me no choice but to do that. Do you really think I wanted to be with someone else? No, I wanted to be with you only because I love you. I won't lie to myself and say that I don't because I do love you. I know I shouldn't have left. I should have gave you few days to think about what you said about aborting our child then me coming to you so we can talk like adults about how we were going to do this together. I know you were afraid. I was also afraid but excited at the same time because I was going to be a father for the first time.

But I chose to do the most stupidest thing by leaving this place and staying somewhere else. I was married with Thato for two years. We divorced after that because I couldn't stop thinking about you day in and day out. I just couldn't stand acting like I was in love with someone while it wasn't that way. I wanted to come back trust me I wanted to do that but I just didn't know how I was going to face you with what you said. I didn't know me coming with my ex wife today at the function held by Mr Khoza I was going to see you looking beautiful as always. I couldn't keep my eyes of you and Thato suggested that I pull you upstairs then having for us to talk and set our differences on how things are going to be like. I don't know how to feel about you

not aborting our son. I won't lie to you it makes me happy that I'm a father. It really does make me happy. You're not the one to be blamed for me for not being in our son's life. I should be blamed for leaving you guys. I don't know but I would love to apologize to you for what I did to you. I'm really sorry

He brought me close to him. He wiped my tears already giving me a peck. I didn't know what to say but I was happy that he was back.

Me: I'm also sorry for what I've said. I shouldn't have said it. I was just afraid. I don't know why

Siyavuya: you don't have to apologize but then thank you for not doing it

Me: it's fine. You should meet up with him. He already knows about you just that he hasn't met up with you that's all

Siyavuya: you told him about me?

Me: you're his father of course I did tell him about you

Siyavuya: wow

A smile suppressed on his lips. I shook my head looking at him.

Siyavuya: I missed you. I want us to fix things together. I want to be with you again if you would allow me though. Or you would love to think about it for an entire month?

I chuckled softly looking at him.

Me: just like the first time yes I would love to think about it

He smiled shaking his head looking at me. He came close to me. I rolled my eyes looking at him. He looked at me with his eyes wide open causing me to laugh. I sure did miss him so much. We went back inside the building to hear about Silindokuhle's condition. I had talked to Siyavuya about Silindokuhle's ceremony. The ceremony was going to happen this weekend. I couldn't be more happy that things were falling into the right place. I don't know if he didn't come back how things they would have been.



## THIRTY ONE

FEW DAYS LATER...

My son did get out of hospital. He wasn't his usual self. My son hasn't recognised Siyavuya. I mean it has been days Siyavuya has been there for all of us as always. My son calls him uncle. The ceremony did happen and it went very well. I have to say I'm proud that everything went accordingly so. No complications were done. Everything went smoothly. Even the rain poured that day when the ceremony was over indicating that everything is fine and things will go accordingly for all of us from now onwards. I won't lie I'm just happy. I don't know what was happening to me. I found myself driving to Siyavuya's house. I wanted to see him that's all. I wanted to thank him for being

there for me and both of the kids. It clearly states that he's still the very same person I fell in love with. While driving to Siyavuya's house. I got a text from Melusi. I didn't understand why he didn't call me. I stopped the car at the side of the road. I looked at the message and it was written — "I don't know if you want to know about this but only a year left for my son to come out of jail. I don't want you to say that I didn't tell you because I know at some point you will get mad at me if I didn't tell you nor reminded you about this. I'm sorry to bring it up but my son told me to tell you. I hesitated at first and I knew at some point I had to let you know. I hope you forgive me." I put my head on the steering wheel as tears streamed down my face. I had

completely forgot about Musa completely. I never thought that he will be coming out anytime soon. Time sure does fly and I never thought it was going to fly this really fast. I just hope with Musa coming out that he won't trouble my daughter otherwise there's consequences that's going to happen especially onto him. At some point this means that I should tell my daughter. I don't want to upset her for not telling her at all. I know how she's going to get at some point if I don't tell her at all. I quickly wiped my tears then I started the car and drove off to Siyavuya's house. I wanted to talk to him. I knew that talking with him I will be okay because Siyavuya always knows what to say at times like this. I found myself at Siyavuya's gate after some time. I got out of

my car then I made my way to the house. I rang the doorbell. The door got opened after some time. Siyavuya stood there looking handsome. He had a towel wrapped around his waist. And he was even dripping wet indicating that he just took a shower. Siyavuya chuckled looking at me. I shook my head letting myself inside. I headed to the lounge and Siyavuya pulled me. We headed upstairs to his room. I sat on the bed looking at Siyavuya as he applied lotion on his body. I know him naked so I didn't have a problem with him getting ready in front of me.

Siyavuya: mother of two

I rolled my eyes looking at him. He chuckled sitting next to me.

Siyavuya: I never expected you to pay me a visit. What is it? Is something wrong?

Me: I found myself driving here and I got this message from Melusi. I knew I had to be here than crying all by myself

I gave him my phone. He went through the message and read it out loud. I sighed looking at him. He smiled looking at me. I shook my head taking back my phone.

Siyavuya: you know that he has already served his years behind bars right?

Me: I know but I'm just afraid for my daughter. What if he's gonna want to rape my daughter again? I don't want any of that at all. My daughter has been through a lot already. I don't want her to fall back into the darkness again

Siyavuya: she has grown and you can see that she's your strong beautiful girl. Yes when she got raped she was very young but look how she is right now. Even though I didn't see her grow to be this beautiful girl I can sense that she was able to conquer everything. At some point she did have nightmares about what happened to her but she was able to fight it because knowing how it was going to affect her. If she has forgot about what happened to her let her be but she has to know that Musa is coming out. She has to know

Me: I will tell her when I get back. I don't know how she's going to react towards this. My baby girl at some point she's stubborn just like me

Siyavuya: she will be fine with everyone by her side

Me: you're being honest you know

Siyavuya: I know. You look gorgeous by the way

I shook my head smiling. I was wearing a long tight dress with my AF1. I did look gorgeous though especially with this new body I have. Well my son made me this way. Imagine it but I won't complain and say I hate my new body because I love it so much. I don't want to lie to myself.

Me: thank you so much and I think you should wear something

Siyavuya: you used to love me this way

Me: I know but at some point you're tempting me

Siyavuya: don't I know? I know very well.  
Am I allowed to do this?

Me: to do what?

He walked his hand inside my dress from my feet. He walked up his hand to my thighs.

Me: what are you doing?

He smiled looking at me. And I knew what he was going to do.

Me: no we won't do that

Siyavuya: at some point I know you want this and so do I. We actually both want this

Me: I can't break my rule

He kissed my cheek then kissed my forehead with his hands on my thighs.



Siyavuya: you know you can say no right?  
Especially if you don't want us to do this but  
I do

I nodded looking at him. He looked at me then got close to me. I held the back of his head then we shared a passionate kiss with Siyavuya pulling my dress up. He smiled looking at me as he saw I wasn't wearing anything underneath. I rolled my eyes causing him to chuckle. He made me lay on the bed then he went in between my thighs. I grabbed his hair as he started eating me. I moaned softly arching my back. My phone rang next to me. I looked at the caller ID. It was Khanyisile. I wonder what is it.

Me: Siyavuya wait

He didn't listen to me but he started increasing his pace as I answered the phone. I bit my hand preventing myself from moaning loud.

Khanyi: where are you?

Me: ahh... Why?

I arched my back more rubbing my face with my other hand. I don't know but I felt like Siyavuya was doing this on purpose. He knew that I was on a phone call.

Khanyi: are you okay?

Me: mhh yeah

Khanyi: I need a favour from you

Me: yeah... Ohh God

Khanyi: are you sure you're okay?

Me: yes I am

Khanyi: I want us to throw a surprise birthday party for my husband

I tried pulling Siyavuya away from me but he was strong. He just kept eating me while finger fucking me really fast.

Me: can we talk... Mhhh... Ohh my God

Khanyi: you should have told me you're having sex and with whom are you having sex with?

Me: bye dude

She laughed. I disconnected the phone call then I pulled my dress up. I was completely naked now. Siyavuya increased his pace more. I felt my orgasm about to come out. I moaned loudly grabbing Siyavuya's hair tightly. I squirm in Siyavuya's face. He licked

me clean then came up to me. We shared a passionate kiss then he laid next to me.

Siyavuya: you're good?

Me: how can I be good when I told you to stop when I got a phone call. And you weren't supposed to touch me at all

Siyavuya: I know how you are that's why I did what I did

I shook my head smiling looking at the ceiling.

Siyavuya: can you please be mine? I can't wait any longer

Me: three weeks left njena

Siyavuya: I want you to be mine now my baby's mother

I clicked my tongue looking at him. He laughed. I shook my head chuckling.

Siyavuya: please sthandwa sami

- My love

I giggled looking at him. I got on top of him. I wanted him to finish what he started and at some point I knew he was going to leave me this way. I started moving slowly on top of Siyavuya as he was already inside of me. It was just a way to say that I agree to be his girlfriend. I mean we both want this after all. I guess the one month rule wasn't going to happen at all.

## THIRTY TWO

MANDISA NXUBO

My mom left saying that she was going to see my brother's father. She has been gone for an hour and at some point I feel like something is definitely wrong. My brother was just playing his PS5. My mom spoils my brother mostly. I mean he's the last born I understand. I also get spoiled though. Especially by my father, his wife and my step siblings. I got a phone call from my best friend Melisizwe. I call him Sizwe and he likes it just like I do. He hates it when everyone calls him by his full name but at some point he got used to being called Melisizwe by everyone else while I'm the only person who calls him Sizwe since I'm his only best friend. Well Melisizwe is three

years older than me. He's currently doing matric. How did we become best friends? It's kind of a long interesting story but that's a story for another day. I headed to the kitchen to pour myself a glass of juice. I answered the phone sitting on the bar stool.

Sizwe: where are you?

Me: we don't greet each other anymore

Sizwe? Really? Ngalinge tuu

- Don't you dare

He chuckled. I shook my head smiling gulping down my juice.

Sizwe: I'm so sorry best friend. Just that I want to see you

Me: my mom is not here so I'm babysitting my little brother

Sizwe: we can babysit him together

Me: yeah really funny

We both laughed.

Me: what is it? Tell me

Sizwe: do you remember Bonolo?

Me: how can I forget the person I fought with that accused me of dating you

Sizwe: of course you wouldn't forget her it's all obvious

I chuckled rolling my eyes.

Me: what's wrong? Why are you asking me about your ex? You wouldn't ask me if it wasn't that important

Sizwe: you know that she came to my crib not so long?

Me: what was she doing there?



Sizwe: she was apologizing for what she did to you. I told her that she's apologizing to the wrong person

Me: of course she's apologizing to the wrong person. She must come to me and tell me straight to my face. I will then remind her what she said to me that day

Sizwe: you're a violent person Mandisa

Me: I'm not a violent person what the hell is wrong with you dude?

He laughed. I shook my head smiling.

Me: what else did she say to you?

Sizwe: she wants us to get back together

Me: unfortunately you guys aren't going to date each other anymore and that's final. I think it's best we both become single. I

won't allow you to date her ever again. That girl made you a fool

Sizwe: don't you think I know that?

Me: well I was just reminding you. Let it be not that since you both were together in your crib you had sex because if that's the case you're dead

Sizwe: you seem to forget I get tempted easily

Me: hell no. I taught you to control yourself and you told me that you were getting there

Sizwe: well I was lying

Me: don't talk to me ever again

He laughed. I disconnected the phone chuckling in disbelief. I seriously can't stand seeing my best friend getting hurt. That's

why I don't want him to get back with Bonolo. She's a psychopath and I don't want to lie to myself. I hate her so bad. Melisizwe knows that very well. My phone rang again. I looked at the caller ID. It was Melisizwe's sister. I knew Melisizwe is using Ntando's phone just so he can talk to me. He knows if he calls I won't answer his phone. And I won't answer his phone anytime soon. I'm just waiting on my mom to come back. I sent her a text and said — "Can you please come back. I missed you and I'm bored so much. I wonder what is it that is taking you so long with Silindokuhle's father. Make it a point when you come back you bring pizza. Please. I'm craving for it. I still love you mom." I know I should have

kept things more simpler but then this is me. Not any typical kid.

- 
- 
- 

SIMYOLISIWE NXUBO

I was laying on top of Siyavuya busy tracing my fingers on his chest. He was busy squeezing my breast. This was just so perfect. I don't want to lie. I missed this so much. I don't know if Mr Khoza never had that function would I have seen Siyavuya again? I'm just thankful he had that function.

Siyavuya: you noticed that Silindokuhle calls me uncle?

Me: yes he's just not used to you.

Remember you haven't been there for him for years. But then you don't have to be worried he will eventually call you dad very soon. You just need to be patient  
Silindokuhle' father

He smiled looking at me. I rolled my eyes changing my position. I sat on top of him with the fleece covering the both of us.

Siyavuya: I miss being at your house

Me: I understand why you're saying that. I mean you had moved in my house without us noticing because obviously you were always there especially when we needed you the most. Especially in Mandisa's condition and also mine but mostly in Mandisa's condition

Siyavuya: things just frequently happened

Me: you know that you're always welcomed

Siyavuya: I know that by now

I smiled looking at him. A notification went on my phone. I took my phone at the bed stand. I looked at the message. It was my daughter. I read her message. I shook my head smiling.

Siyavuya: who is that?

Me: it's my daughter

Siyavuya: what is she saying?

Me: she said "Can you please come back. I missed you and I'm bored so much. I wonder what is it that is taking you so long with Silindokuhle's father. Make it a point when you come back you bring pizza. Please. I'm craving for it. I still love you mom." She's sure just like me

Siyavuya: she is technically. So you have to go now?

Me: it ain't like that you know but my baby girl needs me and so is my son. Can you order Mandisa's favourite pizza and obviously they should get it delivered at my house. I'm going to take a shower in the meantime. I won't get back to my house smelling like sex especially like you

Siyavuya: I don't smell black beautiful woman

Me: ohh please fuck you. Just order the pizza already

Siyavuya: I'll join you in a little bit

Me: no don't. You're staying here until I come out. We're going to have a problem if you come inside

Siyavuya: we won't be doing nothing at all

Me: Siyavuya I know you very well so please don't tell me that

He laughed. I chuckled getting off on top of him. I headed to the ensuite naked.

- 
- 

Siyavuya got in my house. He gave me a peck then we headed to the lounge. I found my kids watching TV. Mandisa got off her sit and hugged Siyavuya. I shook my head smiling. Silindokuhle got up from his sit and hugged Siyavuya. We then took our sit. Mandisa's phone rang. She smiled looking at her phone. I looked at her squinting my eyes. She chuckled looking at me.

Mandisa: what mom?



She asked shrugging her shoulders. I shook my head smiling as she headed out of the lounge.

Me: Lindo

Silindokuhle: yes mom

Me: look baby I know you're not used to the word dad or baba but you need to start using it especially on Siya. I know he hasn't been there for you for years and it's all my fault but the only thing I'm asking you is to call Siya dad. Okay?

He shrugged his shoulders.

Silindokuhle: I will try

Me: thank you. Don't you need anything?

Silindokuhle: I'm okay mom it's fine. If I need anything I'll ask sister

Me: okay but then if you need me I'll be in my room. I just need to speak with your father that's all

Silindokuhle: okay mom

I held Siyavuya's hand then walked upstairs to my room. Siyavuya locked the door as we got in my room. I knew what he wanted and it has been like that for so long. We just can't enough of each other.

## THIRTY THREE

MANDISA NXUBO

TWO WEEKS LATER...

I got out of shower after cleaning myself. I headed to my room then I applied lotion on my body. I wore my short dress with my AF1. I got a text message from my best friend Melisizwe as I threw myself on the bed. I viewed the message and it read as — “Can you please come outside. I missed you dude and it has been two weeks we haven’t seen each other. If you don’t come out in 2 minutes I will come inside. I know very well that your mother is here. So come outside before I make you hate me.” I shook my head smiling getting off the bed. Melisizwe loves threatening me. At some point he’s being unfair. But then what can I say? I’m

used to him being this way. I got out of my room then I headed downstairs. I saw my brother sleeping on the couch. I went over to him. I covered him with a fleece then I headed out of the house. I saw Melisizwe leaning against his brother's car. I walked over to him. He smiled looking at me as I reached to him. He opened his arms. I shook my head getting closer to him. We shared a tight hug. He kissed my forehead and cheeks as we pulled out of the hug.

Sizwe: I'm sorry for lying to you

I walked to my side then I got in the car. Melisizwe also did the same thing. I got off my sit then I sat on top of him with my hands wrapped on his neck. Melisizwe wrapped his arms around my waist.

Sizwe: are you okay?

I nodded looking at him.

Sizwe: you seem to forget that I know you.  
Now tell me what's wrong? You can tell me anything

I smiled looking at him.

Me: I'm seriously okay. You don't need to be worried about me

Sizwe: when we're in this position it clearly states you're not okay that's why I'm worried about you and asking you if you're okay

Me: I just missed you too

He smiled looking at me.

Sizwe: just so you know we didn't have sex. I never thought you were going to ignore me for two weeks because I said that I didn't learn a thing. Well I actually did. Just

that I never thought you were going to take it that way and having for you to ignore me. You know that it breaks my heart when I don't talk to you at all?

Me: I know. I got something that will cheer you up just so you know

Sizwe: what is it?

I took my phone then I went on my WhatsApp. I sent some of the pictures I've last took the past two weeks. I put my phone on my sit then I folded my arms looking at Melisizwe.

Sizwe: what is it?

Me: check your WhatsApp

He smiled looking at me.

Sizwe: my phone is on my right pocket

I took out the phone for him then I opened his phone. I know his pin. I mean we don't hide each other on anything. We literally do go through each other's phone most of the time. I opened his WhatsApp. Well he has a pin and obviously it has to open with a finger print. He opens with the finger print while I open it with a pin. I gave Melisizwe his phone.

Sizwe: so many pictures

Me: you seem to forget it has been two weeks we haven't seen each other not to mention talking with each other

Sizwe: well you're being honest but then let me see what you got for me

He looked at his phone then his eyes popped out. I felt him getting hard underneath me. I mean I'm sitting on top of

him. I shook my head smiling looking at him as he went through every picture I sent him.

Me: are you okay?

Sizwe: very funny

I laughed looking at him as he threw his phone on my sit.

Sizwe: you see what I said to you. You're a freak but you're single

Me: I'm in a relationship with my best friend and that's that. I can't have anyone else having to look at me looking this way. You only have the right

Sizwe: you're being honest

Me: there's this guy who wants me

Sizwe: who's that? Can I see him?



Me: well no you won't see him because I know what is it that you're going to do if I show him to you

Sizwe: you're hiding me from him?

Me: you already hate him after all

Sizwe: you know If I hate someone I hate him for a specific reason. After all you won't even date him. I won't actually allow that. It's best you become single and not date at all

Me: what? You can't be serious

Sizwe: well let me say this there's this girl you hate so much that want me to date her

Me: are you being serious now?

Sizwe: you can hate me now but eventually you will understand why I'm doing this. I'm trying to protect you. You're three years

younger than me. I just want what's best for you. Trust me. I know what I'm doing. You will thank me later for actually doing this for you

Me: today I'm actually going to see this person. I will tell him I ain't ready to be in a relationship

Sizwe: thank you. And who the hell is that?

Me: Nkosana

Sizwe: WHAT!?

Me: the fuck is wrong with you jeez

I said that getting off on top of me. He pulled me back on top of him. I sighed looking at him.

Sizwe: what is my cousin doing with you?

Why would he hit on you after I told him to leave you alone? I will eventually kill him

Me: please let him be. He's a nice guy though

Melisizwe looked at me squinting his eyes.

Me: I'm serious he is a nice guy. You know that he bought me this dress?

Sizwe: get the fuck off me

I laughed getting back on my sit. Melisizwe was really pissed. And he looked so cute. I took his phone then I went through my message on WhatsApp. I quickly hide my smile as I saw what Melisizwe wrote for me. I quickly got off the WhatsApp then I went on his gallery. I looked at his recent pictures with my head resting on his shoulder. I looked at Melisizwe. He rolled his eyes looking at me. I gave him a peck. He looked at me with his eyes popped out.

Me: jealousy doesn't suit you dude

He chuckled looking at me.

Me: if I was dating your cousin how do think things were going to be like?

Sizwe: awkward. We wouldn't talk just the way we do most of the time. Like it's going to be disturbing and in that process we would be drifting away from each other

Me: I don't want that though

Sizwe: I don't want that too

My phone rang. I looked at the caller ID. It was my mom. I answered her phone already panicking.

Me: sth...

Mom: sthandwa sami my ass. Where the fuck are you?

- My love

I gasped holding in my laughter. My mom is cute when she's angry. She always says words that aren't meant to be said but then it doesn't matter.

Me: I'm coming

Mom: where are you?

Me: I said I'm coming. I'm just around the corner

Mom: let it be not that you're with a guy because if that's the case you're going to be in trouble

Me: what kind of trouble?

Mom: MANDISA NXUBO!

Me: okay jeez mom

She disconnected the phone after she said that. I gave Melisizwe a kiss on his cheek.

Me: I have to go. We'll talk on the phone

Sizwe: okay I love you

Me: I love you too

We shared a tight hug then I ran home. I got there after some time. I got inside the house then I headed to the kitchen. I found my mom there.

Me: mommy

She came close to me and sniffed me.

Mom: you were with a guy

Me: uhmm...

She interrupted me.

Mom: I'm telling you. I can smell him on you

Me: ohh okay

Mom: let's talk. I want to give you some advices when it comes to dating, having sex like there's a lot you should know my love. Don't be embarrassed to tell me anything. I mean you're my baby. Let's cook together and have the girl talk

I nodded looking at her. I can't believe my mom is literally doing this with me. But then at some point I need this. I need to know everything. And I mean everything. At some point I will learn a thing or two from her. I do know some things but just that I ain't sure with them. I'm too matured for my age and Melisizwe told me that several times when we started being friends actually best friends.

- 
-

- 

I was with Nkosana. I didn't get to see him few days ago because of Melisizwe coming to see me every time. I wanted to set things straight with him. I'm not ready to be in a relationship that's what I know. I have to be ready for the both of us to be committed to each other at some point.

Nkosana: you look gorgeous

Me: thank you

He smiled looking at me. I just nodded sitting next to him.

Nkosana: look I need to tell you something I know what he's actually going to say.

Me: you love me and want to be with me?

He nodded looking at me.



Nkosana: yes I do. I wanted to tell you earlier but I didn't want to make it look weird

Me: it's fine I get it but then I'm not ready to be in a relationship. What's even worse is that you're cousins with my best friend. If I happen to date you it's going to be a huge problem between me and Melisizwe. And I don't want any of that. I can't afford drifting away from my best friend because I got in a relationship with someone else. I just don't want having for you to brag much about me to your cousin because I know you might do that. It will obviously make him mad and I don't want that all. So I'm sorry I'm not ready to be in a relationship not to mention being with anyone at this moment. I hope

you understand why I'm doing this. We can still be friends I don't mind at all

Nkosana: it's fine I get you

Me: thank you

Nkosana: accept this then

Me: you and always showering me with gifts it's so weird

We both laughed. I looked at what he has bought me. It was a necklace, bracelet, earrings and an anklet. I smiled looking at him. I hugged him tight. This was just so perfect.

## THIRTY FOUR

MANDISA NXUBO

My phone rang as I was laughing with Nkosana. He was telling me about his toxic ex girlfriends. He was laying things out there for me to hear. He sure has dated a lot. Can you imagine that he dated four girls at the same time? He didn't even know they were friends and very close with each other. I mean we're talking about people who are from the same university but don't do the same course. Well Nkosana is doing his first year. He was doing grade 12 last year. He is older than Melisizwe by just a year. Well as I have said Nkosana is an amazing person. I just don't get it why him and Melisizwe aren't getting along. I just don't get it why. At some point I have to

know what's happening and why are they acting this way towards each other. And why doesn't Melisizwe want me to be in a relationship with Nkosana. It's just hard having for me to even let go of the situation. I have to know what's happening. And why. That's all. I looked at the caller ID. It was my mom. I answered the phone getting off on top of Nkosana. We were cuddling with each other nothing more. Well it was my idea. I know I wasn't supposed to be with him but he begged me to stay with him for two hours but unfortunately I spent more than that and I think that's why my mom is calling me. She might be worried about me. I mean I didn't tell her where I was going. I just told her that I'm going somewhere nothing more. I

didn't include me going to Nkosana's crib and I wasn't going to do so. I mean my mom knows that I don't have friends. She doesn't even know Melisizwe. She is going to know him very soon. I mean Melisizwe has been there for me ever since I got at high school the very first day. Imagine, just like that. The first day. It was hard for me to believe it but I ended up believing it at the end of the day. But then we're not talking about that now.

Mom: baby

Me: yes mom

Nkosana looked at me raising his eyebrow.

Mom: you know that you've been gone for hours

Me: I know mom but I will be back before you know it

Mom: I don't want to set rules for you or tell you what to do but please come back before 19h00. I don't want anything to happen to you. You're my first daughter. If anything happens to you I'll be devastated so please come back before 19h00 okay?

Me: if you want me to come back now I can

Mom: no baby it's fine. You can still enjoy yourself with whomever you're with

Me: I will call you after an hour so you can fetch me

Mom: okay bye baby

Me: bye mom

I disconnected the phone call after saying that. I looked at Nkosana who was already

looking at me. I shook my head smiling getting back on my position.

Nkosana: what's wrong?

Me: she was just checking up on me

Nkosana: she wasn't shouting at you or anything like that?

Me: no, just hold me and relax dude

He chuckled holding me close to him.

Me: why aren't you close with your cousin Melisizwe?

Nkosana: I did something really bad to him. I kept on apologizing to him but at some point he doesn't want to listen to me and it has been two years already. So what happened is that when I was 17 — I went to this other event almost close to home. I didn't want to be far from home. It was the

31<sup>st</sup> of December. So everyone was outside late at night. Everything was just smooth and amazing. So what happened is that on this event I went with Melisizwe and his girlfriend. I don't know if you know about her but yeah I was with Melisizwe and his girlfriend not to mention the others. I was single so I didn't have anyone with me. Well we partied that night until it was the countdown. I was supposed to be close with my friends and the others but I wasn't because I had went to the restroom to pee. I was really drunk but I could contain myself because I was used to alcohol. Melisizwe was also drunk but his girlfriend wasn't that drunk. So I had to piggyback my cousin to my house. My friends were able to take care of themselves. I just needed to take



care of my cousin and his girlfriend and that's that nothing more. So we got home and no one was there. Melisizwe's girlfriend helped me with Melisizwe to his room that he uses. Melisizwe immediately slept as we put him to bed. I left the girl on Melisizwe's room because I thought they were going to sleep together since there was a lot of space enough for her. I had only went to kitchen to get myself a glass of water then sleep that's all. I took a shower because I was smelling already. In the process of me as I'm about to apply lotion my body the girl got in my room. I looked at her wondering what's wrong. She came close to me and kissed me. I pushed her and she fell on the bed. I asked her what was wrong with her. She just smiled looking at me. She went on

her knees then dropped down the towel I had in me. She... I wanted to drop her but I couldn't. I was already tempted. So yes we had sex. Melisizwe the next morning he found us both naked. We fought and at some point I almost hurt him. He broke up with the girl then he told to me to go to hell. So yeah I betrayed my cousin by having sex with his ex girlfriend. I really tried stopping everything but I couldn't. I regret it and I still do. I just wish I could turn back the years and correct all of this. Just that your best friend is stubborn enough to listen to me. And that's obviously the reason he doesn't want me anywhere near you because of what happened

I honestly didn't know what to say. I was out of words. So that's what really

happened between the both of them. Wow it's just so unbelievable. And it's all because of that girl.

Me: did he listen to your side of story?

He shook his head looking at me.

Me: I'm out of words

Nkosana: I can see that

He smiled looking at me. I shook my head looking at him. Melisizwe should hear Nkosana out. He can't become stubborn most of the time. I will have to talk to him after all.

- 
- 
- 

SIMYOLISIWE NXUBO

I startled as Siyavuya hugged me from behind. He looked at me worried. I smiled looking at him.

Siyavuya: are you okay?

Me: yes I am okay

Siyavuya: don't make me mad please. Tell me what's wrong

Me: I'm just worried about my daughter. She has been gone for so long

Tears streamed down my face. Siyavuya embroidered me in his arms.

Siyavuya: Mandisa is going to be okay. If you're worried about Musa he won't come after your daughter you know that he's still in jail. He won't come out now. Just let Mandisa enjoy herself for once. She's old enough to take care of herself. She told you

herself that she will call you after an hour so you don't have to be worried. I don't understand why you're crying

Me: mxm

He chuckled giving me a peck. I rolled my eyes getting back to what I was doing.

- 
- 
- 

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

Mom: your aunt is coming tomorrow

Me: alone right?

Mom: how can she come alone? She will obviously come with your cousin and your uncle. What did you expect?

I rolled my eyes looking the other way. Does my cousin have to come? Really? I don't want to see him at all. I headed upstairs to my room. I went on my WhatsApp then I looked at the statuses. Mandisa's status caught my eye. She had posted a full mirror picture with someone I couldn't see because this person hid himself by kissing Mandisa's neck. The other one is when they're both holding hands together having some ribs with other food. I shook my head smiling. I got a text from Mandisa. She said that "we have to talk." I was worried wondering what's wrong. I got another text from Nkosana. He said that "I know you hate me but I want to talk to you. I can't stand us being this way and having for the both of us to pretend to everyone we're

cool while it ain't that way. Please let's meet halfway so we can talk tomorrow since I'll be coming with my parents." I sighed replying to him and saying "Okay we will talk tomorrow and set out differences on the other side. I also hate what's currently happening to the both of us." I wanted us to be the best cousins who loved each other. I mean it has been too long and I hate it so bad. I wonder what is it that Mandisa wants us to talk about. I mean I didn't do nothing wrong not unless she did and she didn't tell me earlier. I just hope it's not something really bad after all. I went back on my books then I started studying. I was writing the following day and I have to pass and that's what I'm going to do after all since I know what is it that I'm doing.

## THIRTY FIVE

MANDISA NXUBO

I got home and I found my mom sleeping on Silindokuhle's father chest. I shook my head looking at them smiling. I walked up to them. They were watching 365 Days. Well I watched that movie with Nkosana.

Obviously I fought with him because of the movie but ended up watching it with him. I have to say the movie is amazing though but then just that it is too sexual. It contains lot of sexual scenes but then it's whatever. I looked at my mom. She quickly got up and ran up to me. She gave me a tight hug. I giggled hugging her back. She seems to forget that I've only been gone for few hours. I guess she was really worried about



me. She gave me a peck. I shook my head looking at her.

Me: what are you watching?

Silindokuhle's father and my mom looked at each other before looking at me.

Mom: nothing but then I'm glad you're back

Me: I told you I was gonna come back. You just need to take a chill pill

Mom: baby look I got something to tell you. Please sit down

I looked at her wondering what's wrong. I sat on the couch next to her. She held both of my hands and sighed before looking at me.

Mom: you know that you have another brother your first brother but he's not my son but your father's son?

Me: I don't know. I never thought it that way. I thought we're all just four kids to dad but I guess not. Where's my other brother then?

Mom: well baby years ago when you were seven you were raped

Me: what? What do you mean? How the hell? Mom what do you mean I was raped when I was seven years old?

Tears streamed down my face uncontrollable.

Mom: listen to me baby

Me: why me?

Mom: Mandisa listen to me you'll question me after me getting done with what I'm about to tell you okay?

I nodded looking at her.

Mom: so I don't know the entire story because you didn't tell me you were afraid and I couldn't do anything about it. Each and every weekend your father always came to get you then you will come back Sunday. So this other weekend things slightly changed. I don't know how but it did at some point. Well on that weekend I was invited at this party and I left with Silindokuhle's father because we were still together that time. So you went home to your father's house then Sunday you came back. Well most of the time your father always brought you home but that time around it was different and I didn't get it why. You were brought by your older brother. So when you came with him. You told me that you missed me and it was

strange because most of the time you would run to your room excited not waiting to touch your laptop. I also said I missed you too. Your eyes were red indicating the fact that you were crying. I sensed that something that happened to you. I just didn't know what it was. I mean you didn't hug me that day and you used to do that most of the time. I asked your brother what happened to you. He said that he doesn't know. I asked you what's wrong. Tears streamed down your face. I looked at your brother. I knew I had to get to the bottom of this. I could sense you were in pain. I told your brother he can leave he then said he will see you Friday. You didn't say anything to him. He then left I locked the door and knelt in front of you. I asked you what's

wrong and what happened to you. You just kept saying that he's going to kill you. I had to plead against you. When you said that it hurts so bad. I asked you what do you mean it hurts. I asked alarmed. I don't know what made me think of taking your pants down but I did. You were bleeding underneath. You were raped. I was sincere and sorry for not protecting you. I asked who did that you and you told me who it was. I knew better than not doing what's right. I took you to the hospital. They did your rape kit. I told the doctor to call the police and she did. Let me just say I got your brother arrested. He was sentenced to 10 years in jail and he's coming out when you turn seventeen so a year is left for him to come out

Me: I was raped by my own brother?

My mom nodded wiping my tears. I just couldn't believe it. Why would my own brother do something like that? Especially to me. His younger sister. This is just so unbelievable.

Me: why can't I remember?

Mom: you had to forget it because you weren't even my baby by then. You were distant but whenever Siyavuya was there you were happy. He's actually the reason you forgot about you getting raped years ago

Me: why didn't dad tell me?

Mom: I don't know but then I just wanted you to know about him coming out. I just don't want him near you. I don't want him to hurt you again that's why you see me this protective

I sighed looking at my mom.

Me: I want to see him

Mom and Silindokuhle's father looked at me surprised. I just wanted to ask him why he raped me that's all.

Mom: I can't allow you to see him maybe when he comes out then but you won't be seeing him this year and also the following year

Me: okay then. Thank you for telling me I guess. I just never understood why you're so overprotective but then now I understand why

She smiled looking at me.

Me: I will be in my room if you need me

She nodded looking at me smiling me. I headed upstairs to my room. I threw myself

in bed sighing loudly. I took my phone and sent a text to Melisizwe. I know we will see each other at school. I just want to talk to him that's all.

•

I quickly ran out of the class to the ladies toilet. I locked the door then I sat on the floor as tears streamed down my face uncontrollable. I was literally shaking so bad. One of my classmates sat next to me as I was reading one of the books my mom bought me not so long ago. I was bored and it was still early in the morning. I was going to see Melisizwe at lunchtime. What happened is that Mandla touched my thigh. I looked at him surprised. Mind you guys I was wearing a skirt and I didn't get it why he was touching me. I pushed his hand



away from me. He chuckled looking at me. I got back from my reading. He then walked his hand inside my thigh. I pushed him so hard and punched him. I had flashbacks of what happened to me. I remembered it clearly. That's why I ran up here. I never thought I'd have to be in this position. I took my phone then I wiped my tears busy sniffing. I called my mom. She answered after some time.

Mom: baby what's wrong? Why are you calling me at this time? Aren't you supposed to be in class?

I started crying loudly hugging my knees.

Mom: why are you crying? Mandisa what happened tell me?

I cried more. Someone knocked on the door. I ignored them.

Mom: I'm coming to get you

She disconnected the phone after saying that. I felt people getting inside the toilet.

"Mandisa?"

That was Melisizwe. I guess they called him up since he's my best friend.

Sizwe: open the door

I didn't listen to him. I cried as I had my eyes closed remembering what my brother did to me. He raped me. He didn't even care that I was in so much pain. He had his way inside of me pleasing himself. I just couldn't understand why.

"Move out of the way."

I heard my mom's voice. I got off the floor.

Mom: baby open up I'm here

I wiped my tears then I unlocked the door. My mom looked at me. Tears streamed down my face uncontrollable. Melisizwe walked up to me. He hugged me. I hugged him tight sniffing.

Mom: let's go please

Melisizwe let go of me then kissed my forehead. Everyone cleared out the way. We walked out of the toilet. We walked to my mom's car. She left me there and went to get my belongings. Tears streamed down my face as I looked at myself in my phone.

- 
- 
- 

SIMYOLISIWE NXUBO

I walked to my daughter's class already fuming in anger. At some point I knew someone is responsible for my daughter to cry herself on the toilet especially early in the morning. I just don't get it why did that child had to do something to my daughter. I got in my daughter's class. I found a teacher already there. I looked at the learners then the teacher.

Her: can I help you?

Me: I came to fetch my daughter's school bag

Her: who are you talking about?

Me: as you can see one student is missing here so I think you have figured who is it that I'm talking about by now

Her: you're talking about Mandisa Nxubo?

Me: yeah can I take her staff?

Her: sure you can

I packed up my daughter's belongings then I looked at the learners. I wasn't going to let this go just like that. Because I know at some point this person will keep on doing that to my daughter. And I can't allow that.

Me: what happened to my daughter?

Them: we don't know

Me: y'all can't say that because y'all were here so technically someone here provoked my daughter so that's why I'm asking what happened. My daughter wouldn't just call me out of the blue especially early in the morning

A girl raised her hand. I nodded looking at her.

Me: your name?

Her: Bokamoso

Me: okay baby tell me what is it?

Bokamoso: well as usual Mandisa was reading a book especially when the teachers aren't in class. While she was in the process of her reading her book Mandla sat next to her. I don't know why he did that. It was kind of confusing. I was seated across them. Mandla technically touched your daughter's thigh. Your daughter looked at him surprised. She pushed his hand away from her. He touched her again but this time around he went further inside. Mandisa got mad she pushed Mandla away from her. She then punched him and ran off. So technically it's Mandla's fault

Me: who the hell is Mandla?

Everyone pointed at him.

Me: just so you know I'm going to report you to the police officers. I don't know who gave you the right to touch my daughter but you won't get away with this. Clearly you thought things were going to go your way well they will not. You'll go to jail and face your years. I can't tolerate kids like you. And thank you for your time mam

I walked out of the class after saying that. I called the police and reported the matter. I was serious about this. I headed to the office to report the matter before heading back to the car. I found my daughter asleep with tears on her eyes. I sighed driving back home. I seriously didn't need this at all.

## THIRTY SIX

SIMYOLISIWE NXUBO

A WEEK LATER...

I carelessly Mandisa's face as she laid on top of me. She hasn't been herself after what anticipated at her school. At some point I wanted to transfer her into another school. I don't want my daughter having for her to go through this again. At first she got raped then at her primary school she was also touched inappropriate for my daughter to stab that kid and now she gets touched again. I don't know but my daughter doesn't deserve this at all. It breaks my heart having to see my daughter break down this way. My daughter hasn't been the same ever since that day. She's always locking herself in her room crying herself to



sleep. It lucky that I have a spare key. I have to be there for my daughter. I literally hate seeing her this way. And this is the second time she is actually being this way. I just can't stand seeing her this way. Tears streamed down my face as my daughter started moving whining a little bit. She was having a nightmare as always. Siyavuya got in the room. He looked at me sighing. He came and sat next to me. He wiped my tears then hugged me from behind.

Me: she hasn't been doing so well the past week and I hate it so much having to see her this way. I'm literally trying to not break down but it's hard. It breaks my heart seeing my baby this way. I don't know why this is happening to my daughter. Why does she have to suffer? She doesn't deserve any

of this. She doesn't at all. I don't know but my heart is not at ease. I just can't stand seeing my daughter this way. I can't it's hurts so much

Siyavuya: she will be okay baby you don't need to be worried

Me: I don't know about that. I mean it has been a week. She is still traumatized somehow. I know this boy got punished but my daughter isn't okay and she won't be anytime soon

Siyavuya sighed looking at me. He wiped my tears and kissed both of my eyes not to mention my knuckles. I sighed looking at him.

Siyavuya: she should start going to the therapy. I mean that's the only way she can be okay. I can pay for her. I know the first

time she was able to forget everything because of me but now she's older. She's turning 16 in no time. I don't think she will do what she used to do years ago. So the only way we can help her is by her attending therapy. She will go there thrice a week. We will see her process and if she gets better then everything will be okay

Me: I will talk to her when she wakes up

Siyavuya: well she has to wake up because there's someone who wants to see her who claims to be your daughter's best friend

Me: who the hell is that? My daughter doesn't have any friend as far as I'm concerned. She would have told me if she has one

Siyavuya: well we're talking about a guy here. I guess that's why she didn't tell you

Me: a guy you say. How old would you think he is?

Siyavuya: well I have asked him questions and he answered them honestly. He's actually 18 years old doing matric

Me: I won't say anything but then he can come up here

Siyavuya: okay baby. Look baby when your daughter becomes okay can we please go out

Me: sure we can go out and I need this outing not to mention being eaten so hard

Siyavuya: baby we're not alone

I giggled looking at him. He gave me a peck. I bit his lower lip. He chuckled pulling out.

Siyavuya: ohh baby you're... Ohh fuck

I chuckled looking at him as he walked out of the room. I shook my daughter. She moved moaning softly.

Me: baby someone is here to see you

She turned to look at me without sitting up straight.

Mandisa: who's the hell is that?

She said that in her low tone.

Me: language young lady

Mandisa: I'm sorry

Me: it's fine baby

Mandisa: who is here to see me?

Me: Siyavuya said that this person claims to be your best friend

Mandisa: you mean Melisizwe?

Me: I don't know his name

Mandisa: well it is him. Let me get up and go see him. I told him to not come in this house until I introduce you to him myself but clearly this person doesn't listen at all. I'm going to kill him

Me: I see you're a violent person

Mandisa: to him? Yes I am. Melisizwe knows how I am

A knock came on the door.

Mandisa: come in

Someone got in the room. It was the guy that hugged my daughter when I came to fetch her last week after what happened. I never thought he was my daughter's best friend. I guess that's why he hugged her after she got out of the toilet. My daughter

looked at Melisizwe squinting her eyes. I shook my head smiling looking at her.

Mandisa: what the fuck are you doing here?

Melisizwe: ayyy Mandisa you can't ask me that I'm worried about you. You have been ignoring me and you know I hate that. At some point I should be mad at you but I love you so much to be mad at you. I miss the old you dude

Me: should I give you guys space?

Mandisa: no stay

Melisizwe: I know I don't know the entire story but I'm sorry for what happened to you. I'm really sorry but at some point I hate seeing you this way. I need my best friend back. Please come back. I know it may be hard to forget everything but

technically I will be there for you. You know that

Mandisa: I know but it's hard. It's just so hard

She wiped her tears. Melisizwe came close to her. I got off the bed and I let them be. I walked out of the room. I think they basically needed to be alone. They can handle this both of them. I believe in them.

- 
- 
- 

MANDISA NXUBO

I wiped my tears looking at my best friend. I'm so happy he didn't listen to me and decided to give me a visit. I don't know how it would have been.



Sizwe: you look awful

He was laying his head on my tummy  
looking at me.

Me: fuck you

He chuckled looking at me. I shook my head  
smiling looking at him.

Me: thank you for coming I guess

Sizwe: anything for you bestie. If you want  
to talk to me. You know that I'm here for  
you

I nodded looking at him. My phone rang. I  
took my phone on the nightstand. I looked  
at the caller ID. It was Nkosana. I haven't  
been able to talk to him for the past few  
days. Just that things hasn't been okay for  
my side. I just couldn't talk with him for  
long hours. He does check up on me every

time. And he makes it a point that he calls me before I sleep and I appreciate it. I have to say I missed him. I mean I haven't seen him for a week. At some point I should see him and spend some quality time with him. I answered the phone sighing.

Me: baby

Melisizwe looked at me raising his eyebrow. I hit him playful giggling.

Nkosana: you got me worried. Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay baby you don't need to be worried

Nkosana: you seem to forget that you're my baby. I should be worried about you and I haven't seen you in a week and I hate it

Me: I hate it too but then I will make a plan on coming to see you and spend some quality time with you

He chuckled over the phone. I smiled shaking my head.

Nkosana: well since my mother is Nkosana's mother sister I'm actually here

Me: ohh I hear you. Did you both talk?

Nkosana: yes we're cool now but I didn't tell him about us. I don't want to make him mad

Me: you know that at some point he's going to find out about us and I don't know how things are going to be like. I don't want anyone fighting for me and if it gets to that point I'm sorry but I will have to end things

between the both of you even though it will  
break my heart

I sniffed. Melisizwe looked at me.

Sizwe: are you crying? Are you okay?

Me: yes I am. Can you just give me a minute  
I'm still talking with someone here

He nodded excusing himself to the en-suite.  
I wiped my tears.

Nkosana: you're with him?

Me: he's my best friend you know that. He  
came to see me because I haven't been  
myself lately

Nkosana: I know he's your best friend. I'm  
actually happy that he's doing what is  
basically right. He cares about you obviously

Me: baby

Nkosana: no it's fine. You don't need to explain yourself. I don't understand why you're making it as if it's bad

Me: I'm not believe me

Nkosana: you know that I love you right?

Me: I know you do

Nkosana: you don't have to be worried about anything. Everything is going to be okay believe me when I say this especially to you. We're gonna be okay. I'm thinking of telling him. I just want to be over with this

Me: can we both tell him after a month or two? I just don't want to break his heart as yet. You both may be cool together now but how would things be when he immediately find out what's happening between the two

of us. He might hate us but then we'll have to see how it goes

Nkosana: I hear what you're saying. Okay we'll tell him after two months

Me: thank you for doing this

Nkosana: it's my pleasure baby. We'll talk later on because obviously you're with my cousin

I giggled shaking my head.

Nkosana: I love you baby

Me: I love you too baby and have a nice day don't do anything stupid because I will kill you

Nkosana: here's my old baby

Me: fuck you

We both laughed.

Nkosana: bye my love

Me: bye baby

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I smiled shaking my head. Melisizwe came back. He looked at me raising his eyebrow.

Sizwe: who's the lucky guy?

Me: just someone

Sizwe: if you say so

I laughed pulling him closer.

Me: take off your shoes so we can both rest

Sizwe: you and demanding me

Me: nigga don't make me mad

Sizwe: OMG you don't say that to your best friend

I rolled my eyes laughing as he talked girly.

He took off his shoes then got in the bed

with me. I slept in his chest. He kissed my forehead. I smiled holding him tighter.



## THIRTY SEVEN

SIMYOLISIWE NXUBO

FEW DAYS LATER...

My daughter walked downstairs looking beautiful. She was wearing a dress with her AF1. She looked at me smiling. The past few days she has been attending her therapy section. She has been doing very good. I love her for this. I'm just happy she's doing okay now. Having to see her not okay at all just doesn't work well for me. I'm happy I listened to Siyavuya about having for my daughter to attend therapy. Look at the process right now. It's exciting seeing her this way. At some point I feel like my baby is in a relationship just that she's not telling me at all. She will tell me when she's ready herself.

Mandisa: you look so gorgeous mom where are you going?

Me: I'm going on a date with my man obviously

Mandisa: that's why you sent Silindokuhle at grandma's house?

Me: I knew you wouldn't want to spend time with your brother so I did what anyone else they would have done

Mandisa: well you did good. You look extremely gorgeous mom

Me: thank you and you look stupendous

Mandisa: thank you so much mom

Me: where are you going if I may ask you?

Mandisa: I'm going out just as you said you're also going out

Me: you're going out with your boyfriend?

Mandisa: I... Mom? Should I really tell you that?

Me: you don't have any choice. And ohhh what do you want on your 16<sup>th</sup> birthday?

Mandisa: I don't know. Probably money or gift but you will buy me whatever that you want to give to me as long as it's not ugly

Me: who do you take me for? Really? I ain't those boring mother. You know that

We both laughed looking at each other.

Me: should I drive you to your date or this person is coming to fetch you here in my house?

Mandisa: he's actually coming to fetch me but I don't want you to see him as yet. I mean our relationship is still new. We

would never know how things are gonna take and go but if we're good after two months then I will introduce you both to each other

Me: if you're saying that he's coming to fetch you how old is he? I mean you're young. You can't date anyone older than you

Mandisa: he's four years older than me

Me: Mandisa

Mandisa: I know he's older than me mom but we love each other though. He is not giving me any doubts about him treating me some type of way. He loves me mom. I know he's way older than me mom

Me: I don't care how it goes. You will never know what he does at the University when

you guys ain't together. You're busy telling me that he loves you and you both fucking love each other. That's really funny. I'm sorry but I'm being honest. Look I was once young just like you. You'll never know what he has in store for you. He may say that he loves you every time he's with you and who knows when he's no longer with you he tells someone else that he loves them. I'm not saying do something you hate doing because of me but I just can't allow you to be with him. What if he hurts you? Baby I just don't want anything to happen to you. I don't even want you to be hurt. I know for sure this guy will hurt you. I'm not saying it because I want you to break up with him but because I know he will hurt you. First boyfriends aren't cool as always great. You

will have your heart broken at some point. I know what I'm saying. Everyone knows that. You can even ask my parents they will tell you the same thing

A knock came on the door. Mandisa looked at me sighing before walking to the door. I know I should be happy for my daughter but it just scares me that she's in a relationship with someone older than her. I know Siyavuya is older than me but it's a two different thing here. My baby is just 15 that's the problem with me. I just have to see how things are going to be like.

Mandisa: I will see you later on mom

Me: don't hate me please

Mandisa: why would you think that mom? I don't hate you. I love you so much to hate

you. I will see you when I come back and please enjoy yourself

Me: thank you baby and enjoy yourself too. Just so you know I love you too baby

She walked up to me. We shared a hug then she kissed my forehead. I smiled as she walked out of the house. I headed to the kitchen. I poured a glass of wine waiting for Siyavuya.

•

Siyavuya held my hand looking at me smiling. I shook my head smiling looking at him. He kissed my hand.

Me: can I be excused before we have our dessert?

Siyavuya: of course baby you can go

He gave me a peck then I stood up and headed to the ladies room. I did my business then I washed my hands. I headed back inside. I found Siyavuya talking with a waiter. They were both smiling at each other. I shook my head walking towards them. I cleared my throat as I took my sit.

Waiter: I'm sorry here are your deserts and enjoy please

I nodded looking at her. She walked away.

Siyavuya: baby are you okay?

I nodded looking at him having my chocolate ice cream. Siyavuya held my hand. I looked at him eating my ice cream.

Siyavuya: baby you know that I love you right?

I nodded looking at him.



Siyavuya: baby please say something

Me: you're interrupting me. I want to enjoy my ice cream

He chuckled looking at me. I rolled my eyes looking at him as he kissed my hand. I bit something hard.

Me: ahhhh what the fuck

Everyone looked at me alarmed. I took whatever that I ate and held it in my hand. I took a napkin then I cleaned this thing. My eyes popped out. I looked at Siyavuya. He was smiling looking at me. Tears streamed down my face. Siyavuya knelt in front of me. He held both of my hands as I cried looking at him. He wiped my tears and gave me a peck.

Siyavuya: baby

I looked at him sniffing.

Siyavuya: look baby I love you so much. I really do. The first time I saw you I just literally fell in love with you having for us to fake dating for a month then making our thing official. Everything has been beautiful I don't want to lie to myself. You even gave me a son and I appreciate that. Thank you so much for raising our son. I don't want to waste any enough of your time but can you please marry me? I want to be with you forever having to wake up next to you everyday seeing this beautiful face. So baby can you please do honours of making me your man and marry me?

I nodded vigorously looking at him. He slipped the ring on my finger as everyone cheered looking at us. We shared a

passionate kiss. This was so amazing. I looked at the ring not believing this. I'm going to get married to the man I love.

- 
- 
- 

## MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

I shook my head looking at my phone seeing Mandisa's status. She was on a date with her boyfriend that I don't know about. I wanted to see who she was going to go out with but I held in myself. I was with my ex girlfriend. We weren't as perfect when we were both together. Technically we just couldn't do it. We didn't end in bad terms. We're good friends nothing more. I mean she's in a relationship with one of the guy I

know. Well this ex girlfriend of mine is a white girl. She's Cassie. She's a beautiful chubby girl. She's a year older than me. When we got to be together after some time that's when we got know how old one is at some point. She's an amazing girl though. I couldn't ask for any more. Cassie sat on top of me looking at me.

Me: how is your boyfriend doing?

Cassie: I don't know dude. It has been three weeks I haven't seen him

Me: but you're still with him?

Cassie: you know I'm not a cheater

Me: so you're saying I was cheater?

Cassie: of course not. You were perfect trust me you were just that we both got in a relationship without knowing each other

but I loved being with you. You were amazing. Trust me you were

Me: I know I was baby girl. I know I was

Cassie: right now you're being too much but then what can I say? You're actually this way

Me: of course I am

Cassie: your best friend is in a relationship?

Me: yes she is. She surprised me though. I'm just wondering who is she in a relationship with. She just doesn't want to tell me. She's busy telling me that she will tell me after two months

Cassie: let it be not that she's dating someone older than her not to mention someone that you're close with. You

surprised me by being best friends with her.  
I mean she's very young

Me: she's too matured though. I know why  
I'm saying that

Cassie: I know dude. You still work out?

Me: would I stop?

Cassie: no you wouldn't

I smiled looking at her.

Cassie: you're spending the night?

Me: yes I am. Let me give a call to my mom

She gave me my phone. I called my mom.

She answered the phone at the first ring.

Me: mom

Mom: where are you?

Me: I'm at Cassie's house. I will spending a  
night with her. We're just spending time

together. I mean it has been so long I've last seen her

Mom: you're seriously with her?

Me: yes you want to talk to her?

Mom: okay please

I gave Cassie my phone. She talked with my mom laying on top of me with her head on my chest. I just carelessly touched her beautiful skin. She was busy laughing talking with my mom. I shook my head smiling walking my hands around Cassie's body. She doesn't mind at all.

## THIRTY EIGHT

MANDISA NXUBO

I looked at Nkosana as he helped me wear my shoes. He was going to drive me home. I've spent hours with him. I won't lie but I enjoyed myself with him. He didn't give me any doubts that I will consider having to cancel everything. He just made everything beautiful. He firstly took us both to the park then he set up a nice picnic. It was so beautiful. Seeing that made me so happy. Nkosana is sure an amazing partner. I love that for him. We had our picnic together talking about random things. Having for our pictures to be taken. The pictures are so amazing. I even wanted to post them but then I had to remember something. I held in myself and didn't do it. We went to his crib



after the picnic. We couldn't afford going to his aunt's house having for Melisizwe to see us. I don't want anyone to fight anymore and because of me. We had an amazing time there again. Obviously they was food especially my favourite. It was just so beautiful. We ended up cuddling together in each other's arms. Having for the both of us to doze off. So now I'm being taken home by him. I got off the bed and wore my denim jacket. Nkosana gave me a peck. I smiled looking at him. We got out of the house then headed to the car. Nkosana drove off home with him holding my hand.

Nkosana: are you okay baby?

I smiled looking at him.

Me: yes I'm okay. You don't have to be worried

Nkosana: you seem out of space

Me: just that my mom said something to me before I left so I'm trying to process it. And now I'm asking myself how things are going to be like that but I just hope everything goes accordingly. I can't afford to be heart broken by anyone

Nkosana: your mom have doubts about me? She thinks that I'm going to hurt you because I'm doing my first year and four years older than you?

Me: yes but I don't believe any of that. I mean you may be my first boyfriend but I know you won't break my heart. Right? You won't break my heart?

Nkosana: do you really think I would waste my time and come to you and ask you to be my girlfriend and love me just so I can break

your heart and hurt you? No, I came to you for a specific reason. I love you so much to actually do that to you. I know I'm actually older than you but at some point you have to believe that I won't hurt you intentionally so. But if things get to that point please leave me okay?

I nodded looking at him with tears streaming down my face. He sighed looking at me wiping my tears with his other hand.

Nkosana: I won't hurt you baby. You have to believe me. I love you so much. You know that I do

Me: I know baby. I just hope you won't hurt me at all. I just don't want to break down because of a certain person

Nkosana: I promise you baby. You don't have to be worried. Everything will be perfectly fine

I sighed looking at him.

Nkosana: I love you so much

Me: I love you more

He kissed my hand. He pulled over at my street. He gave me a peck. I smiled looking at him.

Nkosana: thank you so much for today. I enjoyed myself but especially being with you

I giggled looking at him.

Me: I also enjoyed myself with you

Nkosana: same time again

Me: don't you have a test you should study for?

Nkosana: I forgot about it. But can I be able to see you next week before I start to write?

Me: it's fine you can come but you won't spend two hours more with me. You know that I have an important test I will be writing next week. They might add another subject so an hour with you is okay. Please don't try to change it okay?

He nodded looking at me.

Me: I will see you next week

Nkosana: next week it is

We shared a passionate kiss then I got out of the car. I walked home with some of the goodies I had with me. I got there and I

made my way inside. I found music playing out loud. I passed the kitchen and I saw my mom with Silindokuhle kissing lustfully. I wonder what's going on between the two of them. I tiptoed to my room. I got there then I locked myself inside. I threw myself in bed before calling Melisizwe. He answered the video call. It seemed like he wasn't alone but with someone else because he wasn't at his room but a different room. I wonder what's going on.

Sizwe: ohh you're back?

Me: was I gone for too long?

Sizwe: too long one would assume you were having sex with your new boyfriend

Me: I don't do that shit. Why would I do that though?

He chuckled. I shook my head looking at him.

: Do you need anything dude?

A female voice spoke over the phone. I definitely knew he was with someone. I just never thought it was a girl.

Sizwe: I want a bunny chow dude

The girl giggled. Melisizwe shook his head smiling looking over at her.

: You seem to forget I'm a white girl but then I'll be back before you know it. If my boyfriend comes and found you here please explain your situation to him about that girl you love. I just don't get it why you're not telling her how much you love her. You're always hurting yourself busy watching her status with her new boyfriend. I just hope

you do the right thing before it's too late.  
Just so you know how we did it too. I will  
see you later on don't throw a party in my  
house otherwise I'll crush your skeleton

Sizwe: you know that you won't do  
anything to me. Just go before you stand in  
a long queue and you know how much you  
hate the sun

: Okay I will see you later on. Bye lover boy

Sizwe: bye Cassie

He smiled as the girl walked out of the  
house. Melisizwe looked back at me.

Me: I see now I'm not your best friend  
anymore but Cassie is. You don't tell me  
that you're in love with this girl I don't even  
know at all



Sizwe: actually you do know her. This girl is so beautiful. She's an amazing person. Every time I look at her she always gives her beautiful contagious smile that makes me love her. She's a strong girl. She has been through a lot but she has been able to make it seem like she hasn't been through a lot. She loves chocolate but mostly hot chocolate with marshmallows. She's young but too matured for her age. She knows what is it that she wants and doesn't want at all. She's an amazing person. I have something planned for her especially on her birthday. I just hope she won't reject me even though she's in a relationship with someone else. I don't wish bad things upon them but at some point I will have to tell her how I feel about her. If she doesn't feel

the same way for me I will understand but at the same time my heart will be broken. I mean spending a lot of frequently time with her made me love her more and more every time. I don't know if she has noticed but at some point she will notice very soon.

What's amazing is that her birthday is in the couple of two months so I'm going to tell her

Me: I don't get it why you're saying that I know the girl you're talking about because I don't know her at all

Sizwe: you will get to know about her in two months time from now

Me: is she beautiful?

Sizwe: she's so gorgeous and she's short in height

Me: that's amazing

Sizwe: are you okay though?

I nodded looking at him.

Sizwe: how was your date with your boyfriend that you don't want me to meet at all?

Me: you will meet up with him. You don't have to be worried

Sizwe: if you say so then

Me: first of all are you okay with me dating?

Sizwe: I'm okay with it trust me. After all I don't make decisions for you. You'll somehow do you. How old is this person?

Me: he's four years older than me

Sizwe: that is a no, no. How could you date someone who's doing their first year in

university? Do you know how people do it when they're doing their first year? They whore around. I'm sorry but I'm being honest. He might tell you that he loves you while he is busy with someone else. You will never know what to expect from him. I'm sorry but even though you hate me for saying this I'm being honest. I would never lie to you. I'm your best friend. At some point I'm looking out for you. I don't want you to get hurt. You've been through a lot and at I don't want you to be hurt because of the person you're dating. I won't make decisions for you but the only thing I can tell you is that people at university are beautiful and handsome there so don't be surprised when you see your boyfriend with another

girl then he tells you that it's his cousin or sister

Me: I don't know why y'all making it sound like it's a bad thing for me to date someone older than me. I made that decision for myself not for anyone. Let him hurt me I will learn from him. After all y'all say that first boyfriends will break your heart so let it be and stop making me think that I made a fucking big mistake jeez!

He chuckled looking at me.

Sizwe: I love you too

Me: fuck you

He laughed looking at me. I clicked my tongue disconnecting the video call. I wasn't going to tolerate this. My mom got

in my room as I was about to head into the ensuite.

Mom: are you okay?

I nodded looking at her.

Mom: I have something to tell you

Me: what is it? Is something wrong?

Mom: ohh no baby everything is perfectly fine my love. You don't have to panic.

Please sit down

Me: I'm naked mom what if your boyfriend gets in here?

My mom chuckled.

Mom: he respects your privacy and it has been like since you were seven baby

Me: no, it's best I lock

She giggled looking at me. I locked the door then I sat next to my mom. She held both of my hands.

Mom: you know that I love you right?

Me: yes I do. Are you okay?

Mom: ohh no baby. I'm perfectly fine

Me: okay what is it?

Mom: you know that I'm in a relationship with Silindokuhle's father?

Me: yes even though you didn't tell me

Mom: well he asked me a question not so long

Me: which one?

My mom looked at me smiling. I looked at her squinting my eyes.

Me: ohh no he didn't. He...

I looked at her left hand. She had a ring on her. I screamed looking at her. She giggled looking at me.

Me: OMG mom you're going to get married

Mom: he didn't want to waste anymore of my time. I mean I made him leave when I was pregnant six years ago and we would have been married by then but then yeah we're both getting married. I mean I love him and he's the only person that has been there for me and also for you. So I couldn't ask anything for him. I love him and he loves me so much. You also included with your little brother. I thought of telling you this before I tell my parents

Me: biological parents? Or aunt Precious's parents?



Mom: you know how I feel about my biological parents but I will tell them

Me: I'm so happy for you mom

Mom: thank you baby

Me: next month you both gotta get married. I don't want you guys to waste anymore of your time guys. I don't know but I will help around with planning your wedding not the traditional one but the white wedding one

Mom: okay baby we will make a plan

Me: I can't wait to tell my best friend

Mom: he's a perfect guy for you, you know

Me: what do you mean?

Mom: you will see in the next couple of months

Me: ohh okay. Can I take a bath now? It's so strange staying like this

My mom laughed getting up. She walked out. I locked the door behind her then I headed to the en-suite to get ready. I'm so happy for my mom. I don't want to lie to myself. It's just so amazing.

## THIRTY NINE

MANDISA NXUBO

FEW DAYS LATER...

My phone rang as I was busy making my bed. I took my phone on the nightstand. It was Melisizwe. I answered the phone as I put it on speaker. I wasn't going to stop doing anything because of Melisizwe. I just need to get myself ready.

Sizwe: baby

Me: the one I love so much

He chuckled. I smiled heading to the ensuite with my phone.

Sizwe: what are you doing?

Me: I'm about to take a bath

Sizwe: where are you going?

Me: andiyi ndawo. Ufuna ndize kuwe?

- I'm not going anywhere. You want me to come to you?

Sizwe: we're going out. Just get yourself ready. Please wear something that's blue and black

Me: I will see from my wardrobe if I have those colours. If not then I wear the colour I want

Sizwe: no you have to listen to me. Now look get yourself ready and when you're about to wear your clothes call me. I'm also going to get myself ready

Me: will it be necessary for me to bring my vibrator?

I wanted to see what he was going to do. I don't have vibrator. I mean I don't know anything about it.

Sizwe: your what? Are you okay?

Me: yes I am. I asked you a question baby

Sizwe: no, I don't understand why you have that thing

Me: to pleasure myself

Sizwe: you know that we have something better for you guys?

I shook my head smiling.

Me: which is that?

Sizwe: you know what I'm talking about.

Stop acting dumb

Me: you'll go alone

Sizwe: that means you won't get that t-shirt

Me: wait... Are you talking about that t-shirt I want so bad?

Sizwe: yes I mean if you don't want it just tell me then I will have to cancel and call up my ex so we can spend time again just like the past few days

Me: you wouldn't do that to me

Sizwe: try me. You have a boyfriend and I don't have a girlfriend mna

Me: okay I'm getting myself ready. I missed you

Sizwe: I missed you too baby

Me: can I spend a night with you?

Sizwe: talk with your mom first. I don't want her to hate me

Me: she won't hate you. She loves you and I have something to tell you about my mom not to mention her boyfriend

Sizwe: you mean your little brother's father?

Me: yes, let me get myself ready. I will call you when I'm done taking a shower

Sizwe: okay baby

I disconnected the phone after he said that. I took off my nightdress then I got in the shower. I washed my body humming my favourite songs. I got done washing my body after some time. I made my way out. I brushed my teeth then I headed back to my room naked. I applied lotion on my body then I wore my lace panties before calling Melisizwe. He disconnected my phone call. I chuckled not believing that he did that to

me. He video called me. I answered his video call. He looked so handsome. I smiled looking at him.

Me: you're so handsome partner

Sizwe: thank you and you're not wearing anything

Me: you won't die seeing your best friend naked. You know how I am

Sizwe: whatever. Go to your wardrobe already

I turned my camera to the back one. I headed to the wardrobe and I opened it.

Sizwe: take the jean I bought you and wear it with that black crop top. Don't forget to include the blue oversized t-shirt and your AF1. If you don't want to wear AF1 you can wear Dr Martin okay?



Me: okay let me wear those then. It's best you come and fetch me as I'm getting myself ready. I'll be done before you get here

Sizwe: okay I will see you in few minutes

Me: if I'm not done when you get here come inside please

Sizwe: I will do that don't worry

Me: bye then

I disconnected the video call after saying that. I took out what Melisizwe said I should wear. I wore those then I looked at myself at the big mirror. I looked so gorgeous. I took some of my pictures. I wasn't going to post them as soon because I will have to take pictures with my best friend. I know at some point he's gonna get mad at me

because I didn't do what was right. A knock came on my door. My phone rang on my hand. It was Nkosana. I answered the phone opening the door. There stood my handsome best friend. We were both matching and I loved it. Melisizwe looked at me smiling. He kissed my cheek before walking to the mirror. I followed him. We took couple of pictures before he posted some as he went me the others he didn't post. We walked out of my room with just my phone. I mean I won't have to pay for anything because my best friend got this.

Nkosana: baby

Me: hey you

We got downstairs. I found my mom with her fiancé. I smiled waving at them walking

out with Melisizwe. We got in the car then he drove off with music playing on the car.

Nkosana: it seems like you're heading somehow

Me: yes I am. Melisizwe is taking me out. I mean it has been so long I've last seen him. So he decided to take me out

Nkosana: you're always with me. I don't blame him at all

Me: yeah, you're good though?

Nkosana: I'm good baby. Just that I'm not feeling very well

Me: what's wrong? Did something happen to you?

Nkosana: I'll be fine baby. It's just a major flu

Me: I will pass by to come see you

Nkosana: no baby don't come. I don't want to make you sick. Just enjoy yourself with my cousin we will both talk when you come back okay?

Me: okay and please be okay

Nkosana: don't worry about me baby

Me: we'll talk when I come back then

Nkosana: I love you and enjoy yourself

Me: I will do that don't worry

Nkosana: bye baby

Me: okay bye

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I sighed looking at my phone.

Sizwe: are you okay?

Me: I'm fine don't worry

He kissed my hand. I smiled looking at him. He pulled over at the mall. We walked out of the car. We both headed to cinema. I smiled looking at Melisizwe. He shook his head as he bought popcorns and drinks for the both of us with other sweets also. We were going to watch Spider Man No Way Home. It was so exciting having to watch the movie with my best friend.

- 

We were both seated at the car having some of the snacks we couldn't eat inside the mall. We did take some pictures which was so amazing. Everyone assumed that we're a couple and we had to make it seem like we are. I mean we were matching and looking so amazing. Melisizwe looked at me

smiling. I shook my head looking at him wondering what's wrong.

Me: what is it?

Sizwe: thank you for today. I really enjoyed myself

Me: I enjoyed myself too. And thank you for the t-shirt. I owe you a lot

He chuckled looking at me.

Sizwe: no it's fine. You won't have to pay me back. I mean I'm your best friend after all

Me: I really appreciate it

Sizwe: come here

I chuckled getting closer to him. We shared a hug then we pulled out after some time.

Sizwe: is there something you want to tell me?

Me: at the moment no

He nodded looking at me.

Sizwe: I love you

I smiled looking at him.

Me: I love you too

I hugged him a tight. He kissed my forehead and both my cheeks. I giggled looking at him. He shook his head smiling having his ribs. I went through my phone. I checked my social media platforms with Melisizwe. He gave me his phone. I went through it. As he also went through my phone. I bit my lower lip realising that Melisizwe doesn't know about Nkosana as yet. Whatever happens, happens after all.

## FORTY

TWO MONTHS LATER...

MANDISA NXUBO

I smiled all by myself watching my pictures and videos with Melisizwe. We both looked amazing. I just love how we both matched each and every time. Especially when we're going out together. For an entire month Melisizwe always took me out especially if I'm not busy with school work not to mention when I'm not with Nkosana at all. At some point Nkosana hasn't been feeling good. I should pay him a visit. This can't go on like this. We only see each other for few minutes then he has to leave. Melisizwe at some point has been there for me and I really appreciate it so much. I don't know what would have eventually happened if he



wasn't there for me. While scrolling through my gallery a phone call came from Nkosana. I sighed answering the phone.

Nkosana: hey baby

Me: hey Nkosana

I didn't have energy for him. I feel like he doesn't love me the same way he used to do so the past few months. I just don't get it why he's acting this way. Especially acting distance towards his fucking girlfriend. You know at some point he thinks that I'm a fool and I'm not. You know I thought to myself this very day and month we would be telling my best Melisizwe about the both of us but it seems like it won't happen the way I want it to happen because I feel like I don't have a boyfriend anymore. It feels like I'm not in love with the same person

anymore. I just don't get it why he just changed like that onto me though. I don't literally deserve this at all. If he doesn't love me the same way why doesn't he just tell me that then I will have to live my life the way I want to do. I can't afford being in a relationship that no one shares the same motion. I just can't. It's like pure disrespect.

Nkosana: I know you hate this constant changes most of the time but something came up. I won't be able to come get you so we can spend time together. I know I should have told you earlier and I'm really sorry for that but then we will have to cancel because this is very important for me

Me: look do what pleases you I don't care. You're used to that. It's your habit. At some point I just feel like you don't want me

anymore. I don't want anyone to waste my precious time. I'm just wondering to myself what is it that is so important for you to cancel on me. But it's fine dude. You can go. I will see you when you're actually free and available for me

Nkosana: don't be like this but you know that I'm doing my first year and I get lot of modules that need my intention

Me: okay Nkosana I hear you attentively

Nkosana: you know that I love you right?

Me: I won't lie to myself, I don't know anymore at this point. You only take me as a kid while you know how I am. I know when a person loves me and what you said to me it's literally hard for me to believe it but then it's whatever

I heard him sigh. I was tired of him with his lies.

Nkosana: I will come later on so I can see you

Me: don't bother yourself just do what is so important than your own girlfriend

Nkosana: okay then I will see you

Me: okay

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I wasn't going to wait for him to tell me anymore lies. I'm just tired. I got off the bed then I headed to the en-suite. I wanted to visit my best friend and just so I can be in his arms. I know when I'll be with him I will feel much better because right now I hate how I'm feeling. I took off my night dress then I got in the shower. I washed my body

humming some of my favourite songs. After some time I got done. I got out of the shower then I wrapped a towel around my body. I head back to my room. I applied lotion on my body then I wore my favourite black short dress with my AF1 and my denim jacket. I looked gorgeous as always. Otherwise I can't look like my problems while I'm this gorgeous and it's all because of my gorgeous mom and my handsome dad. I took my phone and some of the money cab. I don't have a car to drive myself to him. I walked out of my room. I found my mom and her husband on the kitchen making dinner. Well my mom and Silindokuhle's father didn't waste anytime. They got married after a week of them engaged. I was so happy when my mom

was entitled to Siyavuya's surname. She's no longer Simyolisiwe but Uthimna. I love her new name. I don't want to lie to myself. My mom was the happiest when they got married and having for her to wear amadakhi. She's going to be wearing them for the full 6 months then after few weeks I know they're going to get married in white wedding. The only thing that matter is that my mom is happy and so is my little brother. He's now close with his father. He gets jealous when Siyavuya gives me attention while he doesn't to him. It's just so cute having to see my little brother being that way. I hugged my mom and Siyavuya. I took one sandwich and had it with Siyavuya's juice. I call him by his name and my mom doesn't have a problem at all.

Me: good morning beautiful baby

My mom smiled looking at me.

Mom: uyaphi?

- Where are you going?

Me: I'm going to see Melisizwe. I'm not feeling like myself. I know he's gonna make me feel good

Siyavuya: are you sleeping there or not?

Me: andikazi but ndizoni xelela

- I still don't know but I will tell you

Siyavuya: did you talk with your father?

Me: I did, he said that he will come see me before he leaves

Mom: I hope he does comes because he always disappoints you

Me: and it's so irritating andfuni uxoka

- I don't want to lie

Mom: you know that he has his life right?

Me: he shouldn't have made you pregnant then if he knew he was going to do you like this not to mention myself

Mom: let him be my baby

Silindokuhle: tata

- Dad

We all looked at my little brother. He smiled coming towards us.

Silindokuhle: yaphi?

- Where are you going?

Me: I'm going to see my friend. Talking about him, I have to go

Mom: be safe please



I nodded looking at her. I got out of the car then I ordered an Uber. It got to me after some time. It drove me straight to Melisizwe's home. I paid then I made my way out of the car. I headed to the house. I passed by at the lounge. I greeted everyone there then I headed to Melisizwe's room. I made my way inside and I found him watching a movie on his laptop. He smiled looking at me. He moved his laptop then I got on top of him. He gave me a tight hug. I giggled as he squeezed my ass.

Me: you're making me horny dude

Sizwe: we can have sex now but you won't be able to handle me. And you have a boyfriend

Me: I don't think I do. Look where's Nkosana's room?

Sizwe: pass the other two rooms then you will find him on the third one

Me: I will be back

He smiled looking at me. I walked out of his room then I headed to Nkosana's room. I didn't bother knocking. I opened the door. I opened my eyes wide not believing what I'm seeing. Tears streamed down my face. I took a couple step backs before I could regain my senses again. I took what I saw on the dressing table and I threw it on Nkosana and the person he was sex with it. I pulled the girl by her hair and threw her outside naked. I walked back to Nkosana. He tried to get away from me. I slapped him multiple times. He held both of my hands.

Me: ndyeke! Nkosana ndyeke!

- Let me go! Nkosana let me go!

Nkosana: baby I'm sorry

Me: utheni? Ambonya yeva?

- What did you say? Go fuck yourself you hear me?

Nkosana: sthandwa sami buka...

- My love look...

I didn't let him finish. I hit him with my forehead. He groaned in pain. He pushed me and slapped me. I looked at him in disbelief. Did he just lay a hand on me? I don't know when did the others get here but Melisizwe punched him several times.

Nkosana's mom: awunxibe iympahla tuu

- Wear your clothes

Me: she's not going to do that. She was able to have sex with Nkosana right? I want to teach them a good lesson. As for you

Nkosana you're such an ass. I fucking hate you. I should have listened to your cousin. You know it could have been better if you broke up with me and carried on with this harlot of yours than making me a fool. You know you could have told me that you don't love me anymore. I didn't have to find out this way that you're cheating on me. I really hate you so much. You know what I'm going to let things be. I know if I teach you guys a good lesson I would hurt you guys so bad but then Nkosana it's over you can continue and doing the shit you always wanted to do

Sizwe: you were dating him all this time?

Me: I don't want to do this now

Tears streamed down my face. I never thought this was going to hurt so bad. I got out of the room then I headed to

Melisizwe's room. I sat on the bed then I called my mother crying. She answered after some time.

Me: mom

Mom: what is it?

Me: please come fetch me

Mom: why are you crying?

Me: mom just come and fetch me I don't want to see myself here

Mom: okay I'm coming

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I felt a hand on my shoulder. I sighed looking at Melisizwe.

Sizwe: why?

Me: I'm so sorry. I should have listened to you. I don't know what gotten into me

Sizwe: you see why I didn't want you to date him?

Me: I'm sorry you have to forgive me

Sizwe: you should have listened to me. At some point it feels like you don't trust me when I say something to you

Me: I trust you

: "where's my daughter?"

That was my mom shouting downstairs.

Melisizwe held me by my neck then he brought me close to him. He smashed his lips onto mine. Tears streamed down my face as we both shared a passionate kiss. Melisizwe pulled out after some time. He kissed my forehead then looked at me.

Sizwe: I don't want to lie to you anymore even though I'm so mad at you but I love

you. This is the reason I didn't want you to be in a relationship with my cousin because I know how he is. He's a cheater. He dated you because he knows how I feel about you. I tried holding this for long but I think you've noticed how I've been doing things lately. It is because I love you. I don't want to lie to myself

Me: why didn't you tell me earlier?

Sizwe: I was afraid and you weren't going to believe me

Me: I don't know what say. To being cheated on and having for you to be telling me this. I don't know what to say. I don't want to lie you're the only person who makes me happy but can I please think about this. It just came out as a surprise to me

Sizwe: it's fine you can take your time

My mom barged in the room. She walked up to me. She smiled looking at me then she looked at my cheek.

Mom: you're red and swollen

Me: I will be fine and it wasn't him but his cousin

Mom: we're going to report him let's go

Nkosana's mom: please don't report him

Mom: I don't know you, you don't know me so please let me be the mother I am to my own daughter. I won't let your son get away with this. He shouldn't have laid a hand on my daughter. It was wrong of him to do that

When my mom says she's going to do something she literally does it. And I'm used to her being this way. She drove off to the



police station. We got there and they took my statement. Precautions were going to be taken. Mom drove us back home.

## FORTY ONE

MANDISA NXUBO

I walked up to my mom's room. I knocked on her door. She opened after some time. She was still mad about the whole situation but then I have to talk to her. I'm the one to be blamed here because I let anger get into me. I shouldn't have slapped Nkosana multiple times not to mention me hitting him with my forehead. I should have just left and let things be. I just don't understand why Nkosana would do me like that. I thought him being sick most of the time he was being honest only to know that he's been lying to me the whole entire time. He could have just left me all alone and let me be. I guess Nkosana had other plans for me. Or is it because I couldn't give him

more of what I couldn't give to him. Maybe because I didn't give myself to him. I wasn't going to do that. I mean at some point I'm not ready at all. I'm still very young for me to be actually intimate. I sighed looking at my mom. She held my hand and walked with me to my room. She sat on the bed as I stood up pacing up and down.

Me: mama buka...

- Mom look...

She pulled me to sit next to her.

Mom: what is it?

Me: look mom I think you didn't listen to me at all. I want to drop the charges you've made for Nkosana. I know he was wrong to hit me but mom I also hit him multiple times. I should have just left but I became

stupid and I hit him multiple times. Since I have also hit him Nkosana at some point have the right to also lay charges against me. It basically means we can both go to jail and not only him. I know mom that you're overprotective when it comes to me. You like taking actions but you should have asked me firstly what happened. I'm not trying to change how you do things but I'm going to drop the charges against Nkosana. I'm going to let things be. He cheated on me and it wasn't nice of him to do that but we're now over. There's nothing that's going to bring us both together ever again. So mom please make it a point that you listen to me just this once okay?

Mom: he laid a hand on you

Me: I also did the same thing. We both laid hands on each other mom. We were both wrong to do that on each other

Mom: I will call at the police station and have your charges against Nkosana dropped. I don't want him near you ever again you hear me?

Me: we're both over mom. There's nothing that is going to bring us both again

Mom: I warned you about him though but you didn't listen to me

Me: I didn't know things were slightly going to get to this point. Everything was perfectly fine mom between the two of us. I just don't understand what is it that changed because we were okay mom

Mom: you know that they were signs right?  
Him telling you multiple times that he's sick  
and he won't be able to see you. Him telling  
you that something came up he has to go.  
Him making excuses at you lot of times.  
They were signs out there but you couldn't  
see them because you weren't as focused  
as you thought you were

Me: I just don't understand why. He could  
have just told me that he doesn't love me  
and want things to end for the both of us  
but he didn't do that. He made me a fool

Mom: at least you've learnt your lesson my  
baby. Varsity boys aren't as good as you  
think. They are pretty girls out there. You  
will find another person who's gonna love  
you for who you are believe me when I say  
this. Take it from me your mother

Me: I know. You told me the whole entire story mom. Melisizwe told me that he loves me before you got at his home

Mom: really?

My mom asked smiling looking at me.

Me: yes he told me. He took me by surprise I don't want to lie. I never thought that he loves me as in that way. I thought he loves me as his best friend nothing more but when he kissed me and told me I somehow believed him

Mom: so what are you going to do?

Me: I just got out of a relationship mom. I need a break and a long one. So someone has to be patient for me until I'm good enough to be in a relationship again. What's even worse is that I have to focus on my

studies. So I don't want to focus on two things at once this time around. What I'm so afraid of for my best friend is that he is going to be doing his first year and now I'm just afraid of how he's also gonna change up on me just like how Nkosana did to me. I'm just afraid for the worst mom

Mom: you got trust issues I see. Look baby you may never know what Melisizwe has in store for you. Not everyone you see on the street will treat you just how Nkosana treated you. Nkosana had his own intentions but other people also does. Others could treat you ten times worse while the others on the others could treat you so much baby. You just need to believe that it's life. If I tell you how your father did to me you will eventually hate him and I



don't want you to hate him now. I want you to believe that anything is possible. Focus on your studies now please. You will see a lot of Melisizwe so please don't get yourself too worried okay?

I nodded looking at my mom.

Mom: we're done right?

Me: please don't forget

Mom: I will do it right away baby don't worry

Me: okay

She kissed my forehead then headed out of my room. I sighed laying on my bed. It sure has been a long day for me.

- 
-



FEW DAYS LATER...

I was having lunch with some of my classmates. It was raining outside. I couldn't go out to meet up with Melisizwe and have lunch with him. My mom had likely made me a lunch box even though I didn't want it but it came in handy. I was wearing a skirt which was a bad idea. And I was seated by the heater that my teacher had put for everyone. I was very cold. The door got opened we all looked at the door. It was Melisizwe. I shook my head having my chicken mayo sandwich. Melisizwe greeted everyone then he came to me. He kissed my forehead then sat next to me.

Sizwe: why are you wearing a skirt? And it's so short

He took off his baseball jacket and put it on my thighs. I moved a little further from the heater then I looked at Melisizwe.

Me: how are you?

Sizwe: I'm okay but still mad at you

Me: I'm sorry okay?

Sizwe: it's fine. Is your mom fetching you?

Me: no, I will take a cab back home

Sizwe: we can go to my house. I will drive you back

Me: I don't want to see your cousin

Sizwe: I wouldn't have been inviting you home if he was there. I know you don't want anything to do with him

Me: fetch me after school then

Sizwe: give me a kiss

I laughed looking at him.

Me: no ways. We're in my class

Sizwe: you know I could kiss you right now right?

Me: I know but you can't

He held my chair and pulled me closer to him. I rolled my eyes looking at him. He smiled looking at me. I moved his baseball jacket to the table because I was now closer to the heater. I didn't want to burn it.

Sizwe: you know that I'm serious about what I've said that day right?

Me: I know but we've discussed this. I want to focus on my studies and I'm taking a break. I need it after all. I will tell you when I'm ready. Believe me when I say it

Sizwe: I believe you my love

I shook my head smiling looking at him.

Sizwe: now please can I have a little kiss?

Me: no

He looked around then back to me.

Sizwe: they're not looking

He walked his hand on my neck.

Me: behave yourself

He smashed his lips onto mine. I pushed him laughing. He smiled looking at me. The best friend I have. He's definitely something else.

## FORTY TWO

MANDISA NXUBO

Hours went by and it was now after school. It was still raining outside but not hard. Melisizwe came to fetch me as I waited for him inside the class. He had an umbrella with him. He made me wear his baseball jacket. I wasn't going to say no to him. We both walked to the gate. As usual everyone looked over at us. It always has been like that and we're used to it. While we waited for Melisizwe's mother. Melisizwe made me sit on top of him. He wrapped his arms around me while I was busy moving my hands on my thighs. It was really cold outside and I will catch a cold very soon. I started sneezing. Melisizwe made me get off him. He looked at me worried. He gave

me a tissue then I blow my nose.

Melisizwe's mom appeared after some time. We both got in the car. Melisizwe's mom looked at me.

Me: sawbona ma kaSizwe

- Good day Melisizwe's mother

Her: hey, you're seriously wearing a skirt in this weather?

Me: I was feeling hot in the morning and I never thought it was going to rain

I sneezed. I wiped my nose.

Sizwe: cela uvule iaircon mama?

- Can you please open the air-conditioning mom?

Her: you have to come sit in the front or you can take the fleece I have behind you

Melisizwe took the fleece and covered me.  
Melisizwe's mother started driving off.

Sizwe: when we get home can you please  
make her chicken soup?

Her: isn't she going home? I don't want her  
mother to come at my house. You  
remember what happened the last time. I  
just don't want to fight with her

Sizwe: I will drive her back mom

Her: just tell Mandisa to call her mother and  
tell her where she would be at. I don't want  
troubles mna

Sizwe: she will call her

Her: ngoku Melisizwe. Please don't get me  
mad

- Now Melisizwe



Melisizwe looked at me. I smiled looking at him.

Me: it's fine I will call her

Sizwe: okay

I took out my phone then I dialled my mother's number. She answered after some time.

Me: mama

- Mom

Mom: sthandwa sami. Are you okay?

- My love

Me: ndoright mna mama. Buka mama I just want to tell you that I'll be at Melisizwe's home. I don't want you to get worried about me and obviously having to ask me about my whereabouts

- I'm okay mom. Look mom...

Mom: is your ex boyfriend there?

Me: you know very well that I wouldn't have been going there if my ex boyfriend is there. So no he's not there

Mom: don't come back late. I'm still held up here in work

Me: what about Silindokuhle?

Mom: he's with his grandfather. He will be back next week they've asked for him to stay. And obviously your brother wanted to stay too. And you know what that means right?

Me: you know I can't go there. I'm going to school mom

Mom: well you should go there for an entire week

Me: okay I will go but you know I don't like this

Mom: I know baby but you know that at some point you should go

Me: okay mom I will go

Mom: you know mommy loves you right?

Me: and I love you more

Mom: if you don't find me home when you get there please call Siyavuya

Me: I will call him

Mom: good bye baby and please be warm

Me: I will be warm don't worry. Good bye mom

Mom: bye baby

I disconnected the phone after she said that. I looked at Melisizwe's mother.

Me: she's okay with me being with Melisizwe only though. She just doesn't want me near your nephew that's all

Her: you're lucky he's not there. I just wonder what would have happened. But then sthandwa sami ubucinga ntoni udyola nomtu owenza ifirst year? Ziyafeba ezi zinto. Melisizwe uyazi ndizomkaba mna asoze enze omnye umtu isbhanxa. I raised him better than to be a man whore

- But then my love what did you think dating a person who's doing their first year? Those people are whores.

Melisizwe knows I'm going to kick him he will never make another person a fool

Sizwe: the last time I remember she didn't ask you mom

Her: and I'm just letting her know. If you're going to cheat or make a fool out of your girlfriend that you're going to date I'm going to kill you. And I mean it I will kill you  
Melisizwe

Sizwe: okay mama yandhlaza

- Mom you're embarrassing me

I shook my head smiling.

Her: I think she has to know. After all you're both best friends right?

Sizwe: ewe mama but then I was going to tell her

- Yes mom but then I was going to tell her

Me: and your son is in love

Her: nyani? Melisizwe awusandi xeledi heee.  
Uthanda bani maye wena?

- Really? Melisizwe you don't tell me.  
Who do you love?

Melisizwe looked at me squinting his eyes. I smiled looking at him.

Sizwe: I will tell you but you're so forward  
mom

Her: I know baby

Sizwe: please don't call me that in front of  
her

Her: you are my baby njena

Sizwe: mom

We laughed looking at Melisizwe. He shook his head looking at me. He kissed my forehead. I smiled looking at him.

Melisizwe's mom got at the house after some time. We made our way to the house. I sighed in relief as the house was warm.

Sizwe: ngalibali nge chicken soup mama

- Don't forget the chicken soup mom

Her: okay

We headed upstairs to his room. We got there and I took my sit on the bed.

Melisizwe gave me a hoodie and one of his sweatpants also with socks. I took off my uniform then I wore what Melisizwe took out for me. I laid next to him in the bed.

Melisizwe's mom got inside with the soup. I thanked her as she handed me the soup. She excused herself then I had my soup.

Sizwe: you're warm now?

Me: yeah thank you for the clothes

Sizwe: it's nothing. You had to be warm. When you're done I will get you the medicine

Me: okay, why aren't you changing?

Sizwe: I have to make sure that you're okay

Me: I'm okay you can change

He nodded getting off the bed. He took off his uniform then changed to his sweatpants and a vest. I shook my head looking at him.

Sizwe: what?

Me: aren't you cold?

Sizwe: no, I'm perfectly fine

He took my dish since I was finished with the soup. He laid next to me.

Sizwe: you owe me

Me: and what is that? I don't know what you're talking about

He chuckled looking at me. He held my chin then he got close to him. He gave me chills.



His lips touched mine. I closed my eyes as we shared a passionate kiss. He walked his hand on my ass. I bit his lip pulling out. He looked at me smirking. I chuckled as our forehead touched each other.

Sizwe: I love you so much

I laid on top of him as he touched me. He kissed my forehead then hugged me.

Melisizwe is definitely going to be the death of me. Why is he making me feel this way? It is just so amazing and beautiful at the same time. I think someone should get used to this.

43

ONE MONTH LATER...

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

My mom looked at me smiling. I shook my head taking her bottle of wine with two glasses.

Me: awukayboni icream?

- Haven't you seen the cream?

Mom: utsho icream yami?

- You mean my cream?

Me: yes your cream. Where is it?

Mom: iphelile klk yamazi utatakho he has it when he's working late. Do you want me to go buy it now?

Me: please mom. I don't want Mandisa to arrive here without it. She loves the cream so much

Mom: okay I will be back then give me 10 minutes. I'll be back before you know it

Me: okay

She took her important things then she headed out of the house. It was now or never. I had to make it a point that I invite Mandisa over then we talk. I just can't wait any longer. I want to be with her. I meant it when I told her that I love her. I can sense that she wants to give us a chance just that she's scared. She probably thinks that I'm going to do what my cousin did to her. At some point she has to see that no one is the same out there. We all different people. And we all have our story. I headed to my

room with the bottle of wine and the glasses. I had prepared something small for Mandisa. I know how this is going to make her feel. She has told me once that she wants me to do picnic for her. And I never even took her seriously. When I woke up today I remembered that I owe Mandisa something then I came up with an idea. I obviously asked my mom a little tips there and there. She was happy for me. I mean I was doing something I have never done for my exes. Even Mandisa knows that herself. I smiled seeing how everything turned out. The only thing that was left was the cream from my mother. I sat on the bed putting on a movie. I decided on the "Secret Society". My phone rang disturbing me. I looked at

the screen it was Mandisa. I answered the phone with my heart pounding really fast.

Me: sthandwa sami

- My love

She giggled over the phone. I smiled shaking my head.

Mandisa: hey you

Me: are you okay?

Mandisa: yes but no

I sighed wondering what's wrong.

Me: what's going on?

Mandisa: something came up so I'm going to be a little bit late

Me: you will call me when you're done and also coming. I seriously need to see you

Mandisa: and you will see me. I have something to tell you though

Me: what is it?

Mandisa: I will tell you when I get there. Please make it a point that you buy me hot dunked wings with my favourite ice cream. I'm going to need them when I tell you whatever I have for you. I don't know if you're going to take it but it's just too emotional and hard to take in. I don't know how you're going to feel about me after telling you what I have to say so

Me: you're scaring me

Mandisa: don't be. It's too early for you to be like that

I sighed.

Me: do what you have to do then I will get you what you asked me to get for you

Mandisa: please do that. I will see you in no time

Me: okay

I disconnected the phone after saying that. I walked out of my room then I headed to my mom's room. I wanted to talk to my father. He was resting. He didn't go to work. He was tired and woke up late. I knocked on the door. He opened after some time wearing his boxer shorts. I shook my head looking at him.

Dad: what?

Me: you go to gym now?

Dad: yeah I have to be able to carry your mother when we make love. Not that I can't

but I can. Just that I want to see my body in shape. Don't blame me son

Me: you look fine though

Dad: I know. What is it? Girls problem?

I sighed laying down on the bed.

Dad: voetsek hlala. Soze ndthethe nawe ulele

- Voetsek sit. I won't speak with you when you're sleeping

Me: ndidiniwe njena tata

- But I'm tired dad

Dad: andkhathali

- I don't care

I sighed sitting up straight.

Dad: what is it?

Me: yamazi uMandisa right?



- You know Mandisa right?

Dad: why wouldn't I know her? I know her. She's your best friend. She used to date your cousin. I know her son

Me: well when Mandisa fought with Nkosana, I told her that I have feelings for her but I just said to her I love her

Dad: you love her?

I nodded.

Dad: she's your best friend though

Me: aren't best friends supposed to fall in love with each other?

Dad: I don't know because your mother wasn't my best friend. She was best friends with your uncle

Me: how did you guys ended up together?

Dad: you really want to know?

I nodded looking at him.

Dad: I've known your mother since I was eighteen. I was doing my first year that time and your mother was doing her grade 10. I know she was young but she was too matured for her age and obviously her grade. She was beautiful I don't want to lie. She always came home with your uncle especially when they were projects that needed to be done. Or when they had home works. I always pictured her as a child until she surprised me after two years. She came home wearing this black dress that hugged her body. And the dress was short. She was also wearing AF1. I won't forget how she looked that day. She surprised me. She obviously came for my brother nothing

more. And the only time me and your mom spoke was when she was greeting me and that's that. Day by day your mother came home looking so good. I knew I had to do something about talking to her not to mention having her. So this other day I took my brother's phone and texted her to come then I deleted everything. My brother was back at rural areas for a day so I knew I had this chance only. So that's why I took it. She came at the house and I was home alone for just a day. So obviously she greeted me and asked me where's my brother. I told her that he went out. This time around she was wearing a red dress short dress with AF1. On the back it was opened. I walked behind her then I touched her back. She startled. I told her to calm down. She

listened to me. While in that position. I asked her questions and she answered them. When she hesitated to answer my question I would move my hand to her ass or — you know where. I made her turn to look at me and I asked her if she likes me, like would I be perfect for her. She shrugged her shoulders and I kissed her. She froze not knowing what to do. I carried her she wrapped her arms around my neck then I headed upstairs to my room. Don't blame me son but you would have done the same thing if you were in my shoes. So yes in the process of us making love I told her that I love her. She wasn't able to answer me but she did after some time. She told me that it she has been having a crush on me for years just that she never knew that I love her you

see. So yes son that's how our relationship started for years but yes my brother had caught us one night when we were making love. He was mad we didn't tell him. So yeah that's how I ended up with you mom

Me: dad you're something else you know

We both laughed. I never thought my father was that type of person but then I ain't surprised because not so long the past few days I heard them loud moans. And I couldn't sleep because wow. My phone rang. I looked at the caller ID. It was Mandisa. I answered the phone looking at my dad.

Mandisa: I'm coming. I'm done

Me: okay I will be waiting for you by the door

Mandisa: okay

I disconnected the phone after she said that. My mom got in the room. She handed me the cream. I kissed her cheek. She smiled looking at me.

Me: she's coming and wow mom actually uncle's best friend

Mom: you told him?

Dad: he asked me

Mom looked at him squinting his eyes. I shook my head looking at them.

Me: Mandisa said something about going to tell me something that might change how I feel about her. I just don't get it

Dad: she's going to open up to you. You know that you can't get in a relationship with lies. So she's going to open up and tell

you things she has been hiding and never told you before for a specific reason

Me: I wonder what is it

Mom: just listen to what she has to say

Me: okay and thank you guys. I really needed that

Them: our pleasure

Me: can I take your ice cream? It's not for me

Mom: it's fine

Me: how long do you think it's going to take for the hot wings to be delivered here?

Mom: few minutes why?

Me: thank you

I quickly walked out of the room then I ordered the hot wings for Mandisa. I

headed to the room to put the cream there. I ran downstairs and a doorbell rang. I opened the door. It was delivery man. That was fast. I signed then I headed back to put the wings there. I headed downstairs. I became busy on my phone. The doorbell rang. I opened the door and there stood Mandisa looking gorgeous on her red short dress. I hugged her. She smiled looking at me.

Me: you're so beautiful

Mandisa: thank you

Me: let's go to my room

I took her hand then we headed to my room. I got inside first then Mandisa followed. Her eyes popped out. She looked at me then back to what I did for her. Tears



streamed down her face. I embraced her in arms. She cried more. Now I feel bad.

Me: I think overdid things. I can throw out all these things

She looked at me.

Mandisa: no, are you crazy? This is so beautiful. I never thought you had it in you. This is all for me?

I nodded looking at her.

Mandisa: thank you so much

She gave me a peck then she sat down. I sat opposite her. I poured the both of us a glass of wine.

Mandisa: I shouldn't be drinking

Me: you'll be okay trust me

Mandisa: okay look I want to get this over and done with. I know you did all of this so I can agree to be your girlfriend. You're tired of having to wait another month or a year. You want to be with me and I understand because I also want to be with you. I love you so much. Trust me I do love you. I don't want to lie. I do. So what I'm going to tell you is only known by my mom, myself and my mother's husband even my father does. I know you remember when I broke down at school. I will get to that. So years ago when I was just seven or eight years just a young adventurous girl. Who believed in nothing but positive things. So my mom used to take me to my father's house Friday then I come back Sunday. My father was the one who always brought me home but

this time around I wasn't brought by him but by my step brother his name is Musa. He was 20 by that time. So what my brother did to me was that he pulled over by the driveway then he touched me inappropriate but I was used to it because he used to do that when we were home. So he told me that we're going to play a little game that adults play most of the time. I obviously wanted to know what was that. So he came at the backseat then he told me to take off my pants. I did. Obviously I was a kid I didn't know what was happening. He took his thing then made me lie down and had my legs wide open. He moved his thing on me then he forced his way onto me. I screamed in pain. He didn't stop but just close my mouth with his hand preventing me from

screaming. He raped me and had his way with me. I was in so much pain. I couldn't push him off me. He was so strong. I just couldn't understand why he did that to me. He then drove me home. My mom got him arrested the same day and he was sentenced to 10 years in jail and he's getting out in no time. As you can see my mom is overprotective because she doesn't want anything to do with me. So me breaking down at school was because one of my classmate touched me inappropriate and he made me have flashbacks of what my brother did to me. This is what I wanted you to know. I don't want us to get in a relationship with lies with secrets. At some point you were going to know about this

earlier or later. I will understand if you don't want to be with me anymore

I got off the floor then I reached out my hand to Mandisa. She held my hand. She came to me. I gave her a peck.

Me: I'm sorry all of that had to happen to you. You don't deserve it at all. Just because you told me all of that — that doesn't mean I don't want to be with you. I want to be with you. I love you so much. I want you to believe me when I say it to you

Mandisa: are you serious?

Me: I'm serious

She gave me a tight hug. I smiled hugging her back. She gave me a peck then looked at me.

Mandisa: let's eat we still have to talk

Me: yes mam

She smiled looking at me. We took our sit then started having our lunch. We talked about random things. And the only thing she was doing, she was smiling. And that made me happy to see that. I'm just surprised she was able to tell me what happened to her years ago. I love the fact that she was brave enough to do it. She literally does trust me and believes in me. But so do I.

## FORTY FOUR

MANDISA NXUBO

I know having for me to tell Melisizwe what happened to me years ago was too much. I should have done things differently so but it surprised me that he was okay having to listen to what I told him. I thought he was going to freak out then having for him to leave me. I mean when he stood up after I told him everything I was very sure he was going to say I should leave but no he didn't. He just wanted to give me a reassurance that everything is going to be perfectly fine I should believe in him. And I do believe in him. I was laying on top of Melisizwe watching a movie. We were watching our third movie which is "Addicted" it has lot of sexual scenes. It made me feel some type of

way. Melisizwe was busy squeezing my ass. I let him be. The movie ended. Melisizwe made me look at him. I smiled shaking my head. He made me sit on top of him. I felt him hard. I looked at him raising my eyebrow. He gave me a peck.

Me: you should take a shower?

Sizwe: why?

I pointed with my head. He chuckled looking at me.

Sizwe: I will do that don't worry. Are you spending the night?

Me: I'm not supposed to do that

Sizwe: I can drive you back home

My phone rang. I took it at the nightstand. I looked at the screen. It was my mom. I



answered the phone as Melisizwe played with my breasts.

Me: mom

Mom: how did it go?

Me: it went well. For a second I thought he was going to kick me out of his home but no he didn't. He apologized for what happened to me

Mom: so you're both in a relationship?

Me: yes we are

Mom: you know I told you that Melisizwe is the right person for you. I just didn't feel his cousin at all. What's worse is that he cheated on you

Me: it's all in the past. At least now I'm in a relationship with my best friend

Melisizwe smiled looking at me. I gave him a peck. He bit my lower lip. I hit him playful. He laughed. I clicked my tongue looking at him.

Me: you're coming to fetch me?

Mom: do you want me to fetch you?

Me: yes I do, but I still want to spend more time with him

Mom: don't have sex then

Me: I'm not going to do that mom you know very well why

Mom: I know baby but I was just saying. And the pictures you're busy sending to your best friend says a lot

Me: were you going through my phone?

Mom: no, you left your open and obviously on your best friend's chat. I couldn't help myself but to notice the pictures

Me: I'm so sorry

Mom: no, you don't have to apologize. I see that you taking those pictures help you a lot having to forget other things

Me: it does actually

Mom: so he's the only one who gets them?

Me: yes I mean I'm his best friend mom. I wouldn't send these pictures to anyone else what if they leak them? I don't want to trend. I know the pictures are amazing but I can't afford trending in that manner

Mom: I understand you baby. I was just asking

Me: he's the only person I trust and obviously you and Siyavuya

Mom: you need to stop calling my husband by his name. I hate it trust me

Me: I will try calling him dad

Mom: that's better. You can sleep there. You will come back tomorrow late

Me: thank you so much. I owe you

Mom: of course you do. We'll talk bye

Me: good bye mom. I love you

Mom: I love you too

She disconnected the phone after saying that. I took my dress off. Melisizwe looked at me with his eyes popped out.

Sizwe: are you crazy? What if someone gets in here? Wear your dress back please. I

don't want anyone to see your body  
especially my brothers

Me: I'm going to take a shower

Sizwe: why?

Me: isn't it obvious?

Sizwe: ohh your mom agreed?

Me: yes she did

Sizwe: really?

He asked excitedly coming to me.

Me: yes she did

Sizwe: you're so gorgeous

Me: thank you

He gave me a peck. I headed inside the  
ensuite. I took off my undergarments then I  
got in the shower. I washed my body  
humming some of my favourite songs. I got

done after some time. I got out of the shower. I wrapped a towel around my body. I brushed my teeth then I headed back to the room. Melisizwe wasn't in there. I applied lotion on my body then I wore Melisizwe's oversized t-shirt. I took my wings and had them while sleeping on the bed. A knock came on the door. I kept quiet. The knock went on again. I walked to the door. I opened it. It was Melisizwe's older brother. He looked at me smiling.

Manqoba: hello Mandisa

Me: hello bhut' Manqoba

He chuckled looking at me.

Me: your brother is not here. He's probably at the kitchen

Manqoba: you're gorgeous by the way

Me: thank you

He walked away. I closed the door then I laid back on the bed. I watched another movie. Melisizwe came back after some time. He smiled looking at me. I shook my head looking at him.

Sizwe: don't you want me join you?

Me: go take a shower first

Sizwe: yes mam

He gave me a peck then headed to the en-suite. I sent a text message to Melisizwe. I know he has his phone with him. He came to me wearing his Calvin Klein underwear. He looked at me raising his eyebrow before going back in the en-suite. I smiled all to myself. I watched the entire movie until it was over. Melisizwe came to the room with

a towel wrapped around his waist. I got undercover as he applied lotion on his body. I posted some of the pictures I took of Melisizwe. I even tagged him. I didn't write anything big just a little something.

Melisizwe got in the bed. He checked his phone. He shook his head smiling. I laid on his chest. He kissed my forehead. I smiled holding him tight.

- 
- 
- 

I was laying my head on the table. The period pains were killing me. I felt someone touching me. I startled squeezing my waist. I raised my head then looked at who it was. It was Melisizwe. He sat on table and looked at me.



Sizwe: are you okay?

Me: do I look okay to you? I'm not okay. I'm in so much pain

Sizwe: take this

He gave me neoprene pills with water. I sighed taking the pills with the glass of water.

Me: thank you

Sizwe: you shouldn't have come to school?

Me: well I was writing so I had to be here

Sizwe: let's go

Me: where? Why?

Sizwe: you're done writing so let's go. I'll ask a pass out for you

Me: I will be fine tomorrow I'm not coming to school

Sizwe: baby you have to listen to me

Me: I will be fine don't worry

Sizwe: I got something for you

Me: what is it?

Sizwe: you want it now or when we get out of here?

Me: if you want to make drama just make it. I know you pretty well

He chuckled looking at me.

Sizwe: you will get it when we get out of here

Me: I wonder what is that you have gotten for me

Sizwe: something sweet for my baby

I smiled looking at me. He held me by my neck then gave me a peck. I smiled biting

his lower lip. He chuckled as everyone cheered. He gave me a peck then hugged me.

Sizwe: niyaphapha shame

- Y'all so forward

Everyone laughed. I shook my head smiling. The siren rang.

Sizwe: I will come get you after school

Me: okay

Sizwe: I love you

Me: I love you too

He gave me a peck then headed out of my class. I laid back my head on the table. I was still in pain but not like the first time.



Melisizwe's mom had come to fetch us. I was laying on Melisizwe's lap. I hate being on my periods. It's just so wrong. I hate this pain that I'm feeling. We got at Melisizwe's house after some time. We headed inside the house. Melisizwe held my hand and we walked to his room. I sat on the bed looking at Melisizwe as he changed into his sweatpants. He took something out of his wardrobe. He sat next to me. He looked at me smiling before handing me what he had in his hand. I looked through it.

Sizwe: can I take you out?

Me: baby

He smiled looking at me. He had bought me a dress with earrings, necklace, bracelet, watch and an anklet. Not to mention heels. This person is so romantic but never was to

his ex girlfriends. He also gave me a plastic bag from Woolworths with goodies in it. I smiled looking at him. I gave him a peck.

Me: we can go out but when I'm done with my periods. I don't want to wear this dress with anything

Sizwe: really?

Me: I'm serious

He smiled looking at me.

Sizwe: but why?

Me: do I have to explain myself to you?

Sizwe: no, it's fine don't do it but I will know

Me: let me tell you then

Sizwe: no don't

Me: let me tell you why

Sizwe: no, just go and take a shower. I will get pads for you

Me: okay but you know I would have bathe myself at home

Sizwe: I'm just taking care of you baby

Me: thank you baby

He smiled looking at me. I gave him a peck. He headed out of the room. I took off my uniform then I headed to the en-suite. I got in the bathtub then I washed my body slowly. Melisizwe is definitely an amazing person. I agree. No one would have thought of me having to take a bath but no Melisizwe had to be such a gentleman. This is why he's loved so very much.

FORTY FIVE

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

I was busy studying when someone knocked on the door. I sighed wondering what's going on. I thought I have made myself clear to everyone that I wanted to be alone and not be disturbed. They know that I take my studies seriously. I mean I'm writing tomorrow and I can't have them disturbing me because they need a certain thing from me. They should just give me some air to breath for three hours. If I wanted anything from them I would have told them or made my way out of the room then do what is expected. But it's not the case now. I just wonder why now.

Me: I'm very busy here. I told you guys I don't want to be disturbed at all

Mom: someone is here to see you?

Me: is it Mandisa?

I asked that already getting off the bed. I heard my mom chuckling. I unlocked the door then I opened it. I saw Mandisa looking at me hugging herself. I sighed reaching my hand out to her.

Me: thank you mom

Mom: it's fine. And give her warm clothes. This girl loves short things

Mandisa: I was home and I didn't have time to change

Mom: I'm not blaming you or anything. I was just saying my love

Mandisa: ohh okay

Mom: should I bring you guys anything to drink or eat?



Me: no we're fine mom thank you

Mom: okay

She walked away. Mandisa got inside my room. I closed the door and locked it. I went on my wardrobe. I took out a sweatpants, an oversized long sleeve t-shirt and my hoodie.

Mandisa: baby I'm okay

Me: please wear the clothes. I know at some point you have caught a cold

She sighed taking off her clothes. I looked at her squinting my eyes. She giggled looking at me.

Me: you got beautiful breasts

Mandisa: thank you

Me: come here

Mandisa: wait let me...

I didn't let her finish. I got off the bed then I looked at her touching her face. She smiled looking at me. I brought her close to me then I smashed my lips onto her. She wrapped her hands around my neck. We shared a passionate kiss with me squeezing her ass. She moaned softly on my mouth. I carried her and placed her nicely on the bed. She bit my lower and I had ppened her legs wider. I rubbed her clit. She moaned softly holding me tight. I took off her lace panties.

Me: I won't hurt you. You will have to believe me. If you want me to stop I will stop okay?

She nodded looking at me. I took off my t-shirt then I went on my knees.

Mandisa: what are you doing?

Me: you will see

I rubbed her clit. She closed her eyes moaning softly. I kissed her pussy then I licked her. She held my hair and that gave me the strength to open her legs wider and eat her hungrily but nice and slow at the same time. I walked my tongue left to the right fast on her clit. She arched her back moaning loudly. I inserted one of my finger into her. She grabbed my hair tightly.

Mandisa: Ohhh... Sizwe

I finger fucked her. She tightened her walls indicating that she's about to squirm. I touched her g-spot orgasm then I increased my pace while licking her on the other side. She moaned loudly as she started shaking. She squirm on my face after some time. I

cleaned her up then I went back to her. We both shared a passionate kiss. I looked at her. She hid her face smiling. I see I made someone shy.

Me: you're still beautiful

Mandisa: ohh please. Fuck you

We both laughed. I gave her a peck.

Mandisa: that was amazing. Thank you. I never thought it was this amazing

Me: well there's more into that. You know that right?

Mandisa: I know baby

I smiled looking at her.

Me: you know that I love you right?

Mandisa: and I love you so much

Me: never doubt my love for you yeva?

- You hear me

Mandisa: I won't baby su worry.a

- I won't baby don't worry

Me: you're so gorgeous

Mandisa: thank you so much

Me: and you taste amazing

Mandisa: I do? I have a taste?

Me: you don't know that?

Mandisa: how would I have known? I never tasted myself

Me: you should at some point

Mandisa: I appreciate it but no thank you. I rather not

Me: you already tasted yourself when we kissed

Mandisa: ohh wow. I taste so good

We both laughed.

Me: you sure do taste good. Can I taste you again?

Mandisa: ohh no please you made me moan loud. I'm precisely sure everyone thought that we were having sex while it wasn't that you were just muffing me and I loved it thank you so much my love

Me: if you want it again you can tell me you know

Mandisa: I know baby

She got off the bed then wore her panties back on with my clothes. She got on top off me then she gave me a peck.

Mandisa: I love you Melisizwe Skhosana

Me: and I love you too Mandisa Nxubo

We shared a passionate kiss then stayed in that position for long without us moving. I have noticed that Mandisa was already sleeping on top of me. I wasn't going to disturb her or move her. I will let her be. I'm precisely sure she's tired from what I did to her. But it was worth it. I mean she was free with me which was a good thing. I just wanted her to be free and at some point she was able to pass the test which was amazing. I love the fact that she doesn't think much about her brother. And it's a good thing she doesn't do that at all. I don't want her to think otherwise when we're about to do anything to each other.

- 
- 
-

MANDISA NXUBO

TWO YEARS LATER...

Mom: baby come here

Me: I'm very busy you know that right?

Mom: just come. I have something for you

Me: can't it wait? I'm tired and I have an important upcoming test tomorrow

Mom: you need a break though

Me: I will come down when necessary  
okay?

Mom: I'm sorry for being too carrying to my own daughter

I sighed rubbing my face. I got off the bed. My mom is surely something else but who am I to judge for her to be this way when it comes to me. I know she's trying to protect



me but she should accept the fact that I can take care of myself. I mean at the same time I'm not alone. I'm still with the same person I love so much. I headed downstairs to the lounge. I found her with my biological father that I haven't seen for two years straight. I chuckled looking at him. Siyavuya is indeed a better father than my biological father. I shook my head looking at him.

Melusi: my child

Me: the last time I remember my father is Siyavuya so I understand what you're saying to me Melusi

Mom: Mandisa

Me: no I'm serious. What kind of a father are you? You left and never even thought of calling me in those two years of not seeing

you. Are you being for real right now? You come back now and say to me “my child”? You make me wanna puke. You don't deserve the title of being called father. If you knew you weren't going to care for me you shouldn't have made my mom pregnant. You should have just been faithful to your wife but you didn't. You cheated on her then I don't know what you did next. I don't want to see you

: You can't talk to my father like that young lady

Someone said that appearing from nowhere. He looked like my father. I chuckled shaking my head.

Me: I can talk to him the way I want to do so. You can't tell me what to do. I don't even know who the hell are you

Him: I will smack the shit out of you

Me: please bring it on me. Come and slap me. I ain't scared of you

Him: I can see that. I'm impressed

Me: impressed my foot

He chuckled looking at me. I saw Siyavuya, my little brother and my boyfriend coming inside the house. Melisizwe kissed my cheek then sat next to my father.

Silindokuhle: who is he?

Me: I don't know

Silindokuhle: they look like you a little bit though

Me: shut up

He shook his head smiling looking at me then back to the others.

Mom: what is he doing in my house?

Melusi: he came to say hello

Mom: you know you're one sick bastard

He chuckled looking at my mom. My mom got close to him then punched him. She then turned to this other guy and punched him. They both groaned in pain bleeding.

Melusi: did you really have to do that?

Mom: how dare you bring that son of a bitch who raped my daughter ten years ago into my fucking house?

Me: what?

I felt dizzy. I hit something then I fell down. I blinked rapidly as I heard my name being called. I blacked out after some time as the voices faded away from me.

## FORTY SIX

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

Immediately as Mandisa fainted. She had hit her head on the coffee table and that caused her to bleed. We had to take her to the hospital. We couldn't afford doing things ourselves. What if she's going to suffer from memory loss? I just hope it won't get to that point because if it does it's going to affect me so much not to mention her family. I mean she might remember the others and might forget the others. I just wish it doesn't get to that point. I just don't understand why Melusi had to come at Mandisa's home and come with his son who raped Mandisa. I just don't understand what kind of a father is he. He's such a monster. He doesn't deserve to be a father

especially when it comes to Mandisa. He just doesn't deserve this title at all. It has been some time we have got here. The doctor hasn't said anything to us not to mention given us the information if whether Mandisa is okay or not. It was just so stressful having to wait for the doctor. Mandisa's mother was worried about Mandisa and so did the others. Even the biological father with his rapist son were worried about Mandisa. It was really funny I don't want to lie. I never thought they do care about her at some point. But I guess I was wrong.

Me: do you need anything guys?

Silindokuhle: I will get myself a glass of water this waiting is draining my energy

Mandisa's mom: come back immediately please

Silindokuhle: okay mom

He walked away after saying that.

Mandisa's mom: I just want my daughter that's all. She doesn't deserve to be here. And it's these two's fault

She said as she was about to beat them but Siyavuya stopped her. She yanked herself away from him.

Mandisa's mom: you two are fucking dead. If my daughter doesn't survive you're both dead. I will fucking kill you two. I just don't understand why you came into my house to mess things up for me and my family

Melusi: my son wanted to see his little sister

Mandisa's mom: fuck you! And fuck him!  
Fuck you both!

A nurse came over to us.

Nurse: mam you're making noise. You're making everyone scared

Mandisa's mom: I will try to keep my fucking voice down is that okay?

She said that whispering. And she was really mad. I wouldn't even think of coming any closer to her.

Nurse: mam but...

She got interrupted by Mandisa's mother.

Mandisa's mom: don't fucking tell me what to do. I will talk the way I want to so please stay away from me especially us here otherwise I'll beat the shit out of you. I'm fucking worried about my daughter and you



come here and tell me bullshit that I should keep my voice down. Please don't infuriate me and get away from here

She sighed walking away.

Melusi: you know that wasn't necessary  
Simyolisiwe

Mandisa's mother got off her sit and jumped on Melusi. I leaned on the wall as he got beaten. And he was being hurt. Out of nowhere someone pulled her. It was Banele. He was also with Aqhamile. Some of the nurses were already here. One of the nurse decided to clean Melusi.

Mandisa's mom: fucking rapists

She spit on Melusi. Melusi gave Mandisa's mother a dead stare.

Mandisa's mom: I'm not scared of you

Aqhamile: you should stop making her mad  
she will kill you and I will help her

Banele: count me in dude. And what the  
hell are you doing here with your rapist  
son?

Musa: dad

Banele: what? You're rapist it's true. You  
fucking raped your own little sister when  
she was fucking seven so please don't cry  
daddy's here

Musa: I know what I did was wrong and I'm  
sorry I hurt her

Aqhamile: you're apologizing to the wrong  
person. The person you should apologize to  
is the one that's in there

Musa: I will do that

Aqhamile: you were going to do it whether you like it or not

He sighed burying his head.

Banele: what happened to our daughter?

Me: they happened

Aqhamile: and she told me that she's writing tomorrow

Me: and she has been studying ever since I left with Siyavuya

Mandisa's mom: ndizok' kaba

- I will kick you

We all laughed looking at her.

Me: your husband is okay with me calling him by his name

Mandisa's mom: well I'm not

Siyavuya: baby

Mandisa's mom: voetsek

We all laughed looking at her. Silindokuhle came back and he was carrying a cup from McDonalds. I shook my head looking at him. He decided to buy something for himself. I see. He hugged his uncles then he looked at Melusi in a disgusted way.

Silindokuhle: what happened when I was gone?

He looked at his mother. He smiled looking at her.

Silindokuhle: you did this?

Aqhamile: your son is so weird. He's smiling. Who does that?

Me: he does

We all laughed. The doctor got out of the room. We all looked at her.

Aqhamile: baby

Doctor: I told you to not call me that when I'm working at work. Please don't get me mad Mntungwa

Aqhamile: awsemhle sthandwa sami

- You're so beautiful my love

She blushed looking at Aqhamile. I now miss my girlfriend. This was so beautiful to watch.

Mandisa's mom: if you want us to leave we can you know

Doctor: I'm so sorry mam. Yabona ke Mntungwa?

- You see now Mntungwa?

Aqhamile: uxolo sthandwa sami

- I'm sorry my love

She wanted to blush but she held in herself by clearing her throat.

Doctor: we were able to save your daughter. The only thing I can tell you is that as she has hit her head and having for her skull to be open. We had to cut off her hair and see if they wasn't any damages done. She had two broken bottles on her skull. We were able to remove them not to mention stitching her back. So we ran quite some tests and they came back. I don't know if you knew about this but she is four months pregnant. She was going to lose her baby but we were able to save the baby. And she is suffering from memory loss which is so bad. She might remember some of y'all or not. We just have to wait for her to wake up that's all. And if she remember

some of y'all it's going to be good but if not that's going to be bad because it's going to take three to six months for her to regain her memory back. The baby is healthy just so y'all know. That's all for now

Aqhamile: that's good to hear but this thing of her suffering from memory loss makes me frustrated

Mandisa's mom: you made my daughter pregnant?

Me: I didn't know. It just came as a surprise. If I knew I would have done something about but I didn't know

Siyavuya: it explains her eating a lot. Sleeping a lot. Gaining so much. Like it explains just that we weren't aware. And I'm precisely sure she didn't know she was pregnant

Me: I'm sorry

Mandisa's mom: I will forgive you after this

Before I could say something to her she

punched me. I groaned in pain. Wow I

never thought she could punch like that.

She's such a badass. OMG now I understand

why everyone doesn't come near her

because of this.

Siyavuya: baby I understand you're

frustrated but you can't go around

punching everyone

Mandisa's mom: he made my daughter

who's still in high school pregnant. You're

going to pay for damages next month. You

better gather up some money and talk with

your family

Me: I will do that



Mandisa's mom: I'll forgive you after the damages has been paid right now I'm fucking mad at you and those two rapists

Siyavuya: baby

Mandisa's mom: I'm hungry

Doctor: let me clean you up

Me: ohh thank you

I followed her to her office with Aqhamile on the side. We got there after some time. Aqhamile waited outside. She cleaned me up then looked at me.

Busi: really? Dude you're not even a graduate but you made someone pregnant. Are you being serious with me?

Me: I didn't know trust me I didn't

Busi: I know I've been gone for so long but you know that you will have to tell mom and dad right?

Me: yes I know

Busi: what happened to her?

Me: so as you saw there was this other guy with his father who's also Mandisa's father and the guy is Mandisa's big brother. So they came at Mandisa's home and mna I didn't know the guy until this day. So Mandisa's mom punched them and she asked why did Melusi bring the rapist that raped my daughter ten years ago. Mandisa said what then she fainted and hit the coffee table. It broke obviously and we came straight here because she was bleeding

Busi: she also fainted because she wasn't dehydrated. So you're telling me that she got raped ten years ago? How old was she?

Me: she was seven

Busi hit my head. I looked at her squinting my eyes.

Me: why did you do that?

Busi: you're turning 21 and you're in a relationship with a girl who's 17? Are you being real with me Melisizwe?

Me: we've been best friends for years and we've been dating for two years. There's nothing wrong with that

Busi: ohh please you even made her pregnant

Me: yhoo Busi I now know

Busi: this is a mess

The door got opened. It was Aqhamile.

Aqhamile: she has woken up

We got off the office then headed to Mandisa's ward. We got there and indeed they cut her hair. She was crying touching her hair.

Mandisa: my hair. Who the hell fucking cut my hair?

Busi: I did

Mandisa: why? Fuck you. It took me fucking years to grow my hair

Me: Mandisa calm down

Mandisa: and who the hell are you telling me what is it that I should? Get away from me

I backed away from her.

Busi: can you please calm down

Mandisa: my hair

Busi: it will grow back. You're so beautiful

Mandisa: are you serious?

Busi: yes you are beautiful

Mandisa: thank you doctor?

Busi: just call me Busi

Mandisa: okay Busisiwe

I smiled looking at her.

Busi: as you can see you're in the hospital right?

Mandisa: yes why?

Busi: well they didn't tell me the entire story but you had hit your head that's why I had cut your hair because you were pretty hurt but now you're better

Mandisa: ohh and who are they?

Busi: they're your family

Mandisa: why can't I remember them? I don't think I know them. It's my first time seeing them

Busi: you will remember them

She just nodded.

Mandisa's mom: Mandisa

Mandisa: yes

Mandisa's mom: you're beautiful and I'm glad you're awake

Mandisa: thank you but can I talk to you alone and now

Busi: let's give them space

I wonder what is it that she's going to tell her. We walked out of the ward then

waited outside. Busi walked away with Aqhamile. I shook my head looking at them. Mandisa's mom walked out after some time. She had tears onto her.

Siyavuya: is everything okay? Does she remember anything about us?

Mandisa's mom: I tried but she doesn't remember anything at all. This is going to be so long having to remind her every time

We sighed looking at her. I can't afford for her not remember anything at all. She has to come back.

## FORTY SEVEN

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

FEW DAYS LATER...

It has been few days Mandisa has got out of the hospital. I was supposed to be with her but her mother told me that I should tell my family what's happening. And what is it that should be done. Obviously my grandparents weren't happy with the actions I did and the same applies to my uncles, aunts and my parents. If I knew that she was pregnant I would have made a plan but I didn't know at all. I honestly thought we were careful with what we're both basically doing.

Mandisa hates it when at some point she passes two months without having for us to make love. I listen to her because I know if I once make her mad she won't talk to me



for some time and I don't want any of that at all. Everyone was here at home. They came few days ago. We haven't went to Mandisa's home. And we were not going to go there unannounced at all. We didn't want to seem to disrespectful to the family. I was busy with my modules when someone knocked on my door. I sighed wondering what's going on and what's wrong. I walked to the door then I opened the door. It was my cousin Nkosana. I sighed heading back to my working space. He sat on the bed then looked at me.

Nkosana: how do you feel that you're going to be a father?

Me: fuck you

He laughed. I clicked my tongue looking at him.

Me: what do you want from me Nkosana?  
What are you doing at my room?

Nkosana: can't I come and see my cousin  
now who's a disappointment to the family?

I got off my sit then I got on top of him. I  
punched him several times. I was stopped  
by someone pulling me away from Nkosana.  
I spit on him looking at him disgusted.

Dad: son you can't behave like a lunatic. I  
know you're not okay but we can't have  
anyone being hurt

Me: your handsome nephew had the nerve  
to tell me that I'm a disappointment to this  
family. Yes I know I made a huge mistake by  
making Mandisa pregnant but I didn't know  
she was. If I knew she was pregnant I would  
told you guys earlier. But I only knew when  
everyone else knew including Busi. I'm so

sorry for not being perfect for you guys but things happen. Now we can't change the fact that in six months time there's going to be a new baby in this family. You all have to just accept that because if you can't then I don't know why I'm busy wasting my time explaining myself to you guys each and every time. I know at some point whatever that I have planned for both me and Mandisa will be spontaneously amazing. Look the only thing that I'm going to need from everyone in here is to give me some space I have modules that need my attention. I don't want to be disturbed at all because if that's going to be the case things won't be nice at all. Now please excuse yourselves out of my room. I can't have you guys giving me stress. I'm so damn worried

about Mandisa. She doesn't know anything or anyone. It breaks my heart and I'm not okay with it. I haven't seen nor talked to her for days. I miss my best friend, my girlfriend and my partner. I just can't do it without her. I know if she was here she would have made things more easier for me but now things are hard because of certain people telling me that I'm a fucking disappointment into this family. At least I didn't run away nor turned my back on Mandisa. I was always there for her and I will do that forever. I'm not a typical kind of man who will get tempted because I see a beautiful woman walking right past me while I have the person that I love and see beautiful most of the time. It just hurts she doesn't remember anything at all but we

will get to it and now the only thing I need is for you guys to leave me alone and that's all I'm asking for you guys. I just need to be alone

I said all of that shouting. It was just frustrating me and my heart was not at ease at all. I sat on the bed defeated. I wiped my tears. I heard my mom's voice. She got in my room.

Mom: what's happening here? What did you both do to my son?

Dad: I didn't nothing to him but obviously your nephew told him that he's a disappointment to the family

Mom: I can hear shouting all the way downstairs. Everyone heard him. Guys please leave he can't take it anymore. By

Friday he has to be the old Melisizwe and you guys just... Ohh God

She was crying. I held her hand. She smiled looking at me. My father and Nkosana excused themselves. My mom wiped my tears. She kissed my forehead then looked at me.

Mom: everything is going to be perfectly amazing you don't have to be worried at all

Me: I miss her so much mom. This thing of her not remembering everyone torments me so much mom. I have been with her from day one until this time. She has to come back

Mom: she will come back. You just need to be patient. There's nothing we can do for her. The only thing she's going to do for herself is to remember everyone herself. If

you want to help her with that process then you may help her. But unfortunately you can't see her until we go to pay our respects at her home

Me: I just want to see her that's all

Mom: you will see her don't worry. I'm happy for you but still disappointed at you. I won't be disappointed at you forever. It's just a temporary thing until you do the right thing

Me: and what is that — that I should do?

Mom: ask a hand on marriage to her parents before you ask Mandisa yourself. Obviously you won't tell her to marry you now and freak her out. You will do that when she has regain her memory

Me: three months to six months is far but I will be patient. I just need to find a perfect ring for her

Mom: take mine. It was your grandmother's ring. It was passed to generation until it got to your grandmother then me

Me: I don't deserve that ring. It looks so expensive

Mom: it is

Me: Manqoba is the second born he should take it and not me. I will buy her a ring myself tomorrow

Mom: okay baby but if you change your mind I'm still here

Me: I know mom

Mom: and please calm down okay?



Me: okay, can I get back on doing my modules?

Mom: of course

Me: please let it be not that anyone disturbs me because I need focus mom

Mom: it's fine baby I will tell the others

Me: thank you

She kissed my forehead then walked out of my room. I went back on doing my modules.

- 
- 
- 

I was outside on my car as the elders were inside at Mandisa's home. I wasn't allowed inside and I understood why. The only thing

I need right now is to see Mandisa. Not seeing her for this long just makes me frustrated. I had to do something about it. I called Silindokuhle. I knew he was inside and he could help me see his sister. He answered at the second ring.

Silindokuhle: what father to be?

Me: I'm sorry uncle to be but I need a favour

Silindokuhle: how much will I get?

Me: how about R100?

Silindokuhle: what's going on?

Me: I want to see your sister

Silindokuhle: she doesn't remember anyone and I don't want to freak her out by bringing her to you she's going to scream like a lunatic and my mom will kill you

Me: please I just need to see her. It has been a week I've last seen her and I miss your sister so please help me out

Silindokuhle: where are you?

Me: I'm at my car

Silindokuhle: let me do something about telling my mom I'm taking her out for a walk then I will bring her to you

Me: okay I will wait for you

Silindokuhle: you better add another R100

Me: okay I will do that

He disconnected the phone after I said that. I sighed looking at my pictures and videos with Mandisa. We were just so happy and we will be happy again. I startled as someone knocked on my window. I unlocked the car then Silindokuhle got

Mandisa inside the car. I gave him R200 he smiled looking at me.

Silindokuhle: I will be back. Please stay with this guy. I'm going to get your bunny chow is that okay?

She nodded smiling looking at him.

Silindokuhle kissed her forehead then walked away. Mandisa looked at me. She looked so beautiful and her bump was showing. Tears streamed down my face. Mandisa wiped my tears.

Mandisa: you're so weird. Why are you crying?

Me: I'm just so happy to see you

Mandisa: if you say so. I'm Mandisa by the way and you are?

Me: I'm Melisizwe your next boyfriend

She laughed looking at me. I shook my head smiling looking at her. That was what I said to her when I introduced myself to her when I first saw her. It was so amazing.

Mandisa: what makes you sure that you'll be my next boyfriend?

Me: because I can see future

Mandisa: that's amazing

Me: you're so beautiful

Mandisa: thank you. I'm hungry

Me: let's wait for your brother

Mandisa: okay

Me: in the meantime you can lay your head on my lap. I'm precisely sure your back hurts

Mandisa: very much and I don't know why

I smiled as she did what I told her to do. I walked my hand on her back. She moaned softly.

Mandisa: ohh my God that's good please don't stop

I chuckled massaging her. In the process of me doing that to her she slept. I guess she was indeed tired. Even though she's sleeping I'm glad I'm with her and nobody else but her. It just makes me so happy.

## FORTY EIGHT

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

THREE MONTHS LATER...

I looked at Mandisa smiling as she walked towards me. She looked at me squinting my eyes. Ever since I saw her when the damages were paid Mandisa told her mother that she likes me and she would love to spend more time with me because I treat her good. I mean I only just massaged her back that day not to mention helping her eat the bunny chow Silindokuhle brought for her. It made me happy that she would love to see me again and again.

Obviously Mandisa's mother was not pleased at all because she didn't want me near Mandisa until she gives birth not to mention regain her memory back. I had

crossed my boundaries and Silindokuhle got in trouble at some point. Even after I had explained to Mandisa that I can't see her she was always persistent and doesn't want to listen. She told me straight if I don't want to be with her I should tell her straight away. Obviously I didn't want her to have her episode so I told her everything but not everything entirely so. She told me that she loves me. Obviously I shed a tear because I wanted to hear that for way too long. I have been the happiest for the past three months spending time with Mandisa. What's still worse is that she hasn't remembered a thing. It breaks my heart I don't want to lie. I miss the old Mandisa not that I'm not appreciative with the new Mandisa. I am appreciative just that she has



to come back. I mean there's a baby coming in two months. She just needs to come back. Mandisa got in the car. She sighed loudly as she closed the door. She looked at me smiling.

Mandisa: hey you

Me: hey, are you okay?

Mandisa: I'm tired. I just don't fucking get it why. I don't even understand why I have this huge tummy on me. My back hurts so bad. My feet are swollen. It's a lot and it's so tiring as fuck

Me: you'll be okay don't worry. Don't you want to go to spa to get massaged?

Mandisa: only if you're going to pay. I don't mind. I seriously need to be massaged at some point

Me: you will be fine after this

Mandisa: and by the way I should be back before 18h00. If I'm not back by that time I won't see you ever again imagine. So please set the alarm at 17h00 so you don't forget

Me: I will remember very well don't worry Mandy

She giggled looking at me.

Mandisa: I'm Mandisa not Mandy dude

Me: I know who you are. And I have something to tell you

Mandisa: ohh really what is it?

My phone peeped. I took my phone. I had a message from Mandisa's mother. I viewed the message and it read as it follows —

“Please make it a point that you don't do anything to upset my daughter because if

you do she's going to break down.

Yesterday things weren't as nice when you left her please don't say anything that will upset her not to mention do because I'll kill you and you know I'm capable of doing that. When Mandisa says she wants to come home please bring her. And I think she has already told you what time you should bring her and you should listen to her." I sighed starting the engine. I drove off to the spa with music playing on the car. Mandisa held my hand. She smiled looking at me as she laid her head on my shoulder. Mandisa: you know I feel like I know you. Like I have been with you for years. Not so long I dreamt about you making love to me. You were so amazing and I was busy holding you so close to me but you wanted us to

maintain eye contact with strokes there and there. It was just so beautiful I didn't want things to end but then I got woken up God knows how I hated that so very much. I don't know but that dream seemed real to me like we really had made love before. It's like we have a good chemistry together

Me: you're starting to remember bit by bit

Mandisa: what do you mean?

Me: look I'm not supposed to say anything to you. You should ask your parents everything. They have answers for you

Mandisa: you should tell me now

Me: I'm sorry I can't do that. I don't want to fight with everyone especially your mother

Mandisa: what is it that you don't want to tell me? Please tell me Melisizwe

Me: I'm sorry but you will have to forgive me I can't do that

She sighed looking at me.

Me: I'm sorry okay?

Mandisa: it's fine Melisizwe

Me: are you seriously fine?

Mandisa: yeah I'm fine

I kissed her hand. She smiled looking at me.

I seriously wanted to tell her but I'm just afraid of her mother that's all I can say. We got at the spa after some time. We made our way inside. The receptionist looked at us smiling. Her name tag was written Dannie.

Dannie: ohh you're pr...

I interrupted her because I could see what she wanted to say. And I can't afford

Mandisa knowing that she's pregnant. I just don't know how she's going to feel when she's going to found out about this.

Me: I just came, Mandisa can you please go take your sit over there?

Mandisa: ohh okay

She walked away from us.

Me: look Dannie you can't say that she's pregnant especially in front of her. She will lose it. What's happening here is that she had an accident months ago and she doesn't remember anything. The only thing that she knows is that she has a huge tummy not to mention that her back hurts everytime. Not forgetting that she eats a lot and obviously sleeps a lot. Please don't say that she's pregnant in front of her. She will panic and it's not going to be good at all

Dannie: okay I won't mention that

Me: thank you. I bought her here to get massaged obviously you can see yourself that she's pregnant

Dannie: you can leave her to me I will give her the special treatment she needs

Me: thank you and here is my card

Dannie: okay

She did what was necessary then she headed to Mandisa. She said something to her then Mandisa looked at me smiling.

Mandisa: you better not fucking leave otherwise I will kill you

I chuckled looking at her.

Me: I'm right here. I'm not going anywhere you know I won't leave you

Mandisa: okay

She came to me then gave me a peck. She walked away after doing that. I smiled taking my sit on the waiting area. I was offered a glass of wine. I had it while busy on my phone. It was either that or just watch the boring TV.

- 
- 

FEW MONTHS LATER...

My mom got in my room as I was wearing my leather jacket. She looked at me folding her hands. She stood in my way.

Me: mom please don't stand in my way. I have to go see her she needs me

Mom: you know that you can't see her

Me: mom she's going to have my child



Mom: can you please listen to me  
Melisizwe? You can't go and see her

Me: mom why? Can you please tell me  
why? I have to be there for Mandisa. She  
needs me. She can't go through this all by  
herself

Mom: she's not alone her parents are with  
her. She will come to see us tomorrow and  
she's going to stay with us for 10 executive  
days

Me: this is just so wrong

My phone rang. I looked at the caller ID. It  
was Mandisa's mother. I answered the  
phone wondering what's going on.

Me: Mandisa's mother

Mandisa's mom: something is wrong

Me: what do you mean something is wrong?

Mandisa's mom: you have to come here

Me: but you told me to not come and my mom is also telling me that I can't come. What's going on?

Mandisa's mom: I hate to say this but Mandisa needs you

Me: there's something you're not telling me

Mandisa's mom: just fucking come to the hospital and stop fucking asking me questions. Mandisa is busy calling you here. She doesn't want to do anything without you being by her side so come here now

Me: eish I'm coming

My mom snatched the phone away from me.

Mom: when Melisizwe arrives please leave with everyone because they're going to have to be alone for 10 days then we will be able to see them after those days. You have to listen to me it's going to be very important. If you don't listen to me you'll what's going to happen and you wouldn't want that to happen at all. So please listen to me... Thank you he will be there and please don't even ask the gender of the child or anything to do with the baby

My mom disconnected the phone after saying that. She gave me my phone. I kissed her forehead then I made my way out of the house. I got in the car then I drove off to the hospital.

## FORTY NINE

### FINALE

### MANDISA NXUBO

I was woken up by my bed wet. I pulled the sheet away from me. I sighed wondering what's going on. I got off the bed. Someone got in my room. It was my big brother Musa. He smiled looking at me. He locked the door then he walked up to me. I looked at him raising my eyebrow. He hugged me. I chuckled hugging him wondering what's going on with him. He kissed my forehead then he looked at me. I bit my lower lip looking at him. He walked his hand on my neck. He tightened my neck. I slapped him then I pushed him. He chuckled looking at me. He pushed me on the bed. I kicked him. I got off the bed. I walked towards the door.

I screamed as I got pulled by my hair. I held on tight on the door knob. I twisted the key. My head got banged on the door. I punched Musa. He groaned in pain bending over. I quickly got out of my room. A sharp pain went on my tummy. I bit my lower lip heading downstairs. I got held by Musa. He held me by my hair. He smashed his lips onto mine. I bit him. He pushed me. I hit the stairs with my back and I started rolling downstairs. I screamed in pain as I held my tummy. I was in so much pain. I rolled over until I hit the floor hard. I touched my head. I looked at my hand and I saw blood. My eyes started shutting down. My tummy was hurting so bad. I didn't get it why it had to be like that. I just couldn't understand what

was happening at all. I blacked out after some time.

- 

I was woken up by my tummy hurting so bad. I opened my eyes slowly and the light was burning my eyes. I finally opened my eyes after some time. I touched my forehead as I tried sitting up straight but the pain I was having was excruciating. I saw my mom, Siyavuya, Silindokuhle, Melusi and Musa on the room I was at. I was at the hospital. I could tell by the white walls.

Me: what the hell are they fucking doing here?

Everyone looked at me astonished. I raised my eyebrow looking at them.

Mom: ohh my God you remember us

Me: mom what's happening? Where's Melisizwe? Isn't he supposed to be here? I need him here

Mom: he can't come here

Me: what do you mean? He has to be here he's my fucking boyfriend... Ohhh fuck it's hurts so bad

I held my tummy. I screamed looking at myself. What the hell is happening here? Why do I have a huge tummy? Something is definitely wrong. I just don't get it why I have a huge tummy. Why is that my head hurts. I touched my head and I felt my hair shorter than before. I pulled my hair but I couldn't. My hair was so little. Tears streamed down my face.

Me: who cut my fucking hair?

Siyavuya: look baby you had an accident.  
Your hair had to be cut

Me: what? What happened to me?

Mom: what is the last thing you remember?

Me: obviously when they came home and obviously Melusi introducing his son onto us. You were mad that day you punched the two of them then you asked why they brought Musa at my house since he raped me 10 years ago. Then I said what I said before falling down. That's all I remember. Now I understand why they're fucking here

Mom: when you fell down baby you somehow bled through your skull and two broken pieces of bottles were inside of you so they had to cut your hair. And another thing you suffered from a memory loss you couldn't remember anyone of us baby



Me: that's harder than I thought. And why do I have huge tummy?

Silindokuhle: you're pregnant silly

Me: what? I'm pregnant?

Mom: yes and you're going to have a baby now

Me: I don't understand what y'all saying to me

Mom: before your stupid ass father came home you were four months pregnant

Me: why am I giving birth now?

Mom: you couldn't remember us for five months

Me: was I able to write my exams? OMG why did they come? Melisizwe made me pregnant?

Mom: I didn't know you have sex

Me: I'm hungry and I'm in so much.

Melisizwe has to be now

Mom: he can't see you

Me: he has to be here. He's the father to my baby right?

Mom: yes but...

I screamed biting my lower lip. My mom held my hand. I squeezed her hand.

Mom: was I really this strong when I was pregnant?

Siyavuya: yes you were baby

Mom: ohh God

The doctor got in the ward. I think I know her from somewhere. She looked at me smiling. I now recognise her.

Me: call your brother!

Doctor: you regain your memory

Me: somebody please call Melisizwe! Ohh God I'm dying here. Why am I even pregnant in the first place? Ohh God

Doctor: I'm going to get my garments. I can see that you're close on giving birth. I'm coming back

Me: come back with your brother doctor

Doctor: just call me Busi

She walked out of the ward after doing that. I sat up straight doing my breath ins and outs. The pain was so unbearable.

Me: I want Melisizwe here in 5 minutes

Mom: he can't be here baby

Me: I want Melisizwe to be here! I don't care what you're saying to me. I want Melisizwe now!

Mom: eish okay

Siyavuya stayed behind. He kept on massaging my back. It was really aching so bad. After some time Busisiwe got in my room with the other nurses. She placed me nicely on the hospital bed. My mom got inside. She nodded looking at me before she headed out with everyone else.

Busi: are you ready?

Me: I can't do it without Melisizwe being here

Busi: but...

I interrupted her.

Me: you heard me and I won't repeat myself!

I said that grinning my teeth. Melisizwe got in my ward after some time. He smiled looking at me. He came to me. I slapped him as he was about to give me a kiss.

Me: fuck you for making me pregnant  
Melisizwe Skhosana

Sizwe: you're back?

I rolled my eyes looking at him.

Sizwe: I didn't know you were pregnant but I was always there for you

Me: thank you for coming

Sizwe: I will explain everything later on okay?

I nodded looking at him. We shared a passionate kiss. I missed him so much. Tears

streamed down my face. Melisizwe wiped my tears then he held my hand. This was now or never I was going to give birth.

- 
- 
- 

## TWO WEEKS LATER

Taking care of a baby is so fucking hard. Especially with no assistance with you. I know that Melisizwe is always there for me but he also doesn't know much about a child. The people that were supposed to be helping us here was my mom and Melisizwe's mother. You know when Melisizwe explained the situation to me I was so angry but I had to listen to him. I didn't want to lose my baby even though

she wasn't planned at all. We had named our daughter Sinesipho. I mean we have a beautiful gift that we never thought we would have. I never thought things would turn out to be this way. Well at some point I have noticed that Sinesipho isn't much of a cry baby. She just loves sleeping giving me and Melisizwe enough time to sleep. I'm very grateful that I was able to make it until this point. I'm sure very grateful. Melisizwe walked up to me. He had just put Sinesipho to sleep. He smiled sitting next to me. He gave me a peck then held both of my hands. Sizwe: you know that I love you so much right?

Me: I know you do love me. What's wrong? Are you dying? Are you leaving me?

Sizwe: no baby I would never do that to you. You're my best friend, my partner and the mother to our beautiful. I would never leave you just like I never did few months ago. I love you so much to literally do that to you. I want to make things right with you

Me: what do you mean?

He took out something from his pocket before looking at me.

Sizwe: I have already asked your family but they didn't allow me because you weren't still okay at all. So I spoke to my mom. She told me why your family didn't agree of me to do what's right with you. It was very disturbing on why they would try to withhold this beautiful union. I love you so much Mandisa Nxubo. I don't see myself being with anyone else but you. I want to



spend the rest of my life with you. I want you to carry my babies actually our babies. I want to give you the biggest wedding you'd ever ask for — for yourself. I want you to be able to look beautiful extraordinary on the dress you're going choose. But can you please make me a promise. Promise me when you graduate you will wear this ring

I looked at him as he handed me the velvet box. It contained a ring inside. It was so beautiful. Tears streamed down my face just by seeing how beautiful it was.

Melisizwe smiled looking at me.

Sizwe: please promise me that you will wear this ring when you graduate?

Me: are you asking me to marry you?

Sizwe: of course I am but I don't need your answer now but only when you graduate that very same day

Me: I promise you Melisizwe Skhosana

He smiled looking at me. He smashed his onto mine. We shared a passionate kiss. I got on top of Melisizwe kissing him lustfully. I took my dress off. Melisizwe looked at me smirking.

Sizwe: you're sure you want this?

I bit my lower lip looking at him.

Me: I do want this now with you

Sizwe: I love you so much baby

Me: I love you more baby

We shared a passionate kiss. Melisizwe carried me upstairs to one of the room. He placed me nicely on the bed. He careless my

body. He took out his entire clothes. He then got on top of me. We shared a passionate kiss with him rubbing my clit. I moaned softly arching my back. Melisizwe left my mouth he kissed my neck marking his territory. He kissed me on my entire body.

Me: I seriously need you

Melisizwe chuckled looking at me.

Sizwe: are you serious?

Me: just fuck me before our daughter wakes up

Sizwe: okay baby

He didn't listen to me. He went in his knees then he muffed me while finger fucking me fast. I grabbed his hair moaning loud. He walked his tongue left and right in all

directions in a quick pace. I arched my back as I felt my orgasms coming close. I moaned loudly as I squirm on Melisizwe's face. He licked me clean the he came up to me. We shared a passionate kiss. Melisizwe positioned himself onto me. He looked at me in my eye. I still remember how he loves for the both of us to maintain eye contact especially when we make love. Melisizwe inserted himself onto me. I moaned softly as I grab held Melisizwe as he started moving slowly on me. He looked at me smiling. I bit my lower lip looking at me as he increased his pace. It has been so long and I missed this so much...

- 
- 
-

Me: baby everyone is coming to see the baby you should come downstairs otherwise we're going to have a problem

Melisizwe walked downstairs looking at me squinting his eyes.

Me: do look at me like that

Sizwe: I'm tired though

Me: I'm also tired but you know that I need the help with everything

Sizwe: I know baby. Let me prepare dinner

He kissed my cheek then he headed to the kitchen. I fixed the table up. I also cleaned up there and there. After some time a knock came on the door. I went to check who it was. It was my parents with my little brother. I smiled widely hugging them. I was

so happy to see them. I don't want to lie. I let them inside.

Mom: where's the little baby!

Me: she's sleeping

Silindokuhle: you had a daughter?

Me: yes she's just so beautiful

Siyavuya: I'm sure she's beautiful just like you

I smiled looking at Siyavuya. I led them to the dining room. They took their sit. A door knock came on the door. I opened the door and I was welcomed by Melisizwe's parents and siblings. I hugged them as they let themselves inside. I also led them to the dining room. I went to check up on Melisizwe. He was done with everything.

Me: are you okay?

Sizwe: yes I am. This thing of us having sex until late hours will destroy us

I chuckled looking at him.

Me: we just can't resist each other

Sizwe: tell me about it. Is everyone here?

Me: yes

Sizwe: let's go then

We took the food to the dining table with everything then we settled in nicely. We said our short prayer then we started indulging in our food after dishing up for ourselves.

Mom: haven't the baby troubled you?

Me: she doesn't cry that much she just loves sleeping and she's giving us enough time to sleep

Silindokuhle: and making love

Me: dude

We all laughed.

Me: well I won't hide in that but yes

Busi: and it seems like you're both tired

Sizwe: we are very tired but we had to prepare

I heard my baby crying. I excused myself to her nursery room. I smiled taking her from the cottage. I headed downstairs with her. I took my sit then I started breast feeding her. She sucked on my breast just as usual.

Mom: she's so beautiful indeed

Me: thank you mom

Manqoba: what's her name?

Us: Sinesipho



Sizwe's dad: indeed you have a gift

I smiled looking at him. We shared slight conversation there and there. Everyone took turn on holding my baby. It was just so beautiful to witness.

FIFTY

EPILOGUE

FEW YEARS LATER...

MELISIZWE SKHOSANA

I looked at myself in the mirror fixing my tie and my suit. I smiled looking at myself. I sure looked handsome. Not for anybody else but my best friend, my lover and the mother to our beautiful daughter Sinesipho. She sure has chosen a handsome guy over here. I took the velvet box. Mandisa wasn't going to be able to hold it. She told me that she was going to lose it I do believe her when she says that. She always misplaced her stuff then end up not knowing where she has put them. She always blames me and obviously I have to take the blame so she doesn't do anything rational that's

going to make us fight. Even with her blaming me for everything I still love her so much. I will always love her so much. Someone knocked on my door. I sighed wondering who is it because I know Mandisa is with her family probably waiting for me and everyone else. I opened the door and I was attacked by a hug. I recognise a person by sniffing them so at some point if I don't recognise your SCENT I won't hug you back. I smiled hugging Cassie. I never knew she was going to come not unless she has a relationship with someone in this. It can be my brother or my sister who knows. Cassie looked at me smiling. She kissed my cheek then quickly wiped me. She knows very well that Mandisa is going to fight with her. Well the

first time they met it was really awkward because I didn't tell Cassie that Mandisa is in a relationship with me. So what happened is that Cassie was sitting with me while Mandisa sat opposite us. Cassie was busy fixing me and fixing my hair. And Mandisa got really frustrated. I looked at her then I pouted that I'm sorry. Obviously I was apologizing for Cassie's behaviour. Cassie is a touchy person. I know her. I mean I've dated her even though things didn't work out. So what really pissed Mandisa off more was when I ate a hamburger then a sauce was on my cheek. Cassie took a tissue and cleaned me up then she kissed my cheek. Mandisa pulled Cassie by her hair. And obviously it was a disaster. I had to stop them from hurting each other

or it was going to be the other way around. I had to take them both outside so I can explain the situation to the both of them. So I explained what was happening. They couldn't believe it especially Cassie herself. She was bleeding at the spot. And Mandisa was but a little bit. I had to take both of them to the hospital. I don't know what happened when I was away for ten minutes but when I got back I saw something I wanted to see from the start. I guess they spoke to each other. They didn't tell me what they both did but I loved what I was seeing. Ever since from that day Cassie never even thought of touching me nor coming any closer to me because she knows how Mandisa was going to get. Honestly speaking I never thought Mandisa was a

fighting type. It was my first time seeing her beating up someone. I guess we would never know what other people are hiding. I looked at Cassie smiling. She fixed my tie then did my hair. She's used to do my hair and she's the best when it comes to it. Mandisa never did my hair before and I won't say I complain about her not doing any of that at all. Cassie even wants to open up a salon. I told her she can go ahead and open it then obviously I will support her. She wants to do my hair for free. And I don't mind at all.

Cassie: you look handsome friend

Me: thank you and you look gorgeous

Cassie: you should see the others. I guess Mandisa's graduation is important

Me: it is

I showed her the ring. She looked at me popping her eyes out wide.

Cassie: are you serious? Are you going to ask her to marry you?

Me: I already did ask her. I told her when our baby was two weeks old that she must promise me when she graduates she's going to wear the ring. So today is the day. I didn't want to marry her and disturb her from school but now it's the day I've been waiting for — for years. I literally can't wait to see her wearing this ring then having for us to celebrate two things at once

Cassie: this is really beautiful

Me: who are you in a relationship with?

Cassie: don't freak out but I kind of love your sister

Me: I'm not surprised you know. I knew that you had a thing for girls. I saw you eyeing Mandisa. I will kill you when it comes to her

Cassie: she's just a friend I'm telling you

Me: you know I assumed you were in a relationship with my brother or my sister but neither of them. You should shoot your shot

Cassie: I'm planning on doing that when she excuses herself somewhere

Me: okay then

Cassie: your brother is in a relationship with Bonolo

Me: no ways. Are you serious?

Cassie: yes and she's more gorgeous dude. She sure has grown to be so beautiful

Me: Mandisa will kill her when she sees her



Cassie: I would love for her to do that

Me: you love violent and we don't want that today. Just that Bonolo has to keep her distance away from me and Mandisa that's all

Cassie: I will talk with your brother to talk with her girl

Me: please do that. I don't want anything bad happening today

Cassie: it's all noted Mr Skhosana

My mom appeared from the door. She looked at me squinting her eyes.

Mom: you want to make Mandisa and her mother more frustrated?

Me: I was coming either way

Mom: I didn't see the movement

Me: yhoo Mimi

She shook her head looking at me.

Me: Mimi

Mom: Melisizwe

Me: is Manqoba really dating Bonolo?

My mom nodded. I took my belongings then I headed out of my room with the others. We walked downstairs. Indeed Bonolo was here. She looked beautiful. I thought I wasn't going to be able to see her but I do even though she has changed. She wanted to hug me I stopped her.

Manqoba: really?

Me: not unless she wants to be killed today by Mandisa today then it's okay we can share a very big tight hug

Manqoba: babe?

Bonolo: no it's fine

Cassie: Manqoba tell your girlfriend to keep her distance away from Mandisa and Melisizwe otherwise there's going to be a war. Someone will kill someone here

Bonolo: you could have been direct with me about it

Cassie: okay Manqoba? And tell her I'm not her friend

I shook my head smiling as she pulled me outside. She got in my car. I got inside too.

Me: where's your car?

Cassie: my ex ran over me

Me: ohh the psychopath one?

She nodded looking at me. I started the engine then I drove off to the campus. The others were following me behind. I just

can't wait to see Mandisa not to mention my beautiful daughter. I really missed them so much. I don't want to lie to myself.

- 
- 
- 

## MANDISA NXUBO

Tears streamed down my face as I haven't seen anyone. I was getting closer to being called but no one is here as yet. I just don't get it why. Why especially on my graduation day? I will seriously end up on a tombstone really early. And I don't want any of that. Some girl who was seated next to me gave me a tissue. I wiped my nose.

Her: are you okay?

Me: I'm okay. Obviously I'm not fucking okay

Her: whoa I'm sorry for caring but why are you crying?

Me: I can't see my father's baby and everyone else. I just don't get it why they aren't here at all. I'm getting close to being called and I... I will seriously kill them

Her: why are you crying because you can't see your baby daddy?

Me: he's my boyfriend not my baby daddy. Get that correct

Her: you didn't become specific with me what did you expect I was going to say to you?

I looked over again and I saw them taking their sit. They waved over at me. I raised my

middle finger and greeted them with it. Everyone gasped in while the others laughed loudly especially my younger brother. Silindokuhle will annoy you when he wants to do so.

Her: did you seriously do that?

I nodded chuckling.

Me: my mom is going to kill me OMG

We both laughed. We were told to keep quiet. We kept quiet and kept our focus on the other graduates. I got to know the girl's name. She is Palesa. She's an amazing person I don't want to lie. Everything went well. I got called and so did they call the others until the graduation was over. Palesa held my hand as we made our way to my family. I bit my lower lip looking at them.

Silindokuhle laughed at me. I smacked his head.

Silindokuhle: really Ms middle finger?

Me: do you blame me? What if y'all got here when I was already called? I'm mad y'all came late. Where's my daughter?

Sizwe: baby

I looked at him squinting my eyes.

Me: by the way this is Palesa and Palesa this is everyone

Everyone introduced themselves.

Me: are you coming or you're waiting for someone?

Palesa: no one came so I'm coming

I smiled looking at her. We headed to the cars. Everyone drove off to Melisizwe's

house. We got there after some time. We made our way inside. I was holding my baby's hand. On my way halfway inside. I squint my eyes looking at the person I didn't want to see at all. Bonolo looked at me biting her lower lip. I walked inside and as I was about to walk closer to her I got carried away. Melisizwe made me sit on the kitchen counter.

Me: what the hell now? Why is she in my fucking house?

Sizwe: she's in a relationship with my brother

Me: ohh

I looked at him surprised after some time realising what he has actually said to me. I mean I didn't hear him clearly.



Me: she's in a relationship with your brother?

Sizwe: I said that already

Me: wow and she's so beautiful

Sizwe: I never thought you would compliment her

Me: I'm surprised myself but she really does look beautiful. I hope she won't try anything to you otherwise I will kill her

Sizwe: please do that

We both laughed.

Sizwe: I missed you so much

Me: I missed you too

We shared a passionate kiss. Melisizwe walked his hand on my pussy. I smiled

between the kiss. He rubbed my clit. I moaned softly on his lips.

: It would have been better if you took her upstairs now please don't annoy me you will have sex when we sleep. You're both needed

I bit Melisizwe's lower lip smiling. He didn't stop rubbing my clit. He hugged me and looked whoever that was. I bit Melisizwe's shoulder preventing myself from moaning.

Sizwe: mom we're coming don't worry

Melisizwe's mom: I really hate to say this but make it snappy

Sizwe: I love you my love

Melisizwe's mom: fuck you

Melisizwe laughed and he inserted his finger onto me. I arched my back gasping.

He increased his pace as we shared a passionate kiss.

Me: baby wait

He kissed my neck leaving hickeys onto me. Wow thank you so much Melisizwe for that. I moaned softly as I felt myself close on exploding. Melisizwe backed away as he rubbed my clit really fast making me squirm. I moaned sucking Melisizwe's neck but I ended up not doing it. I moaned loudly. Melisizwe closed my mouth with my hand. He stopped what he was doing after some time. He gave me a peck then he took some wipes. He cleaned me up then he cleaned the floor and other places. He then sprayed the spray that smelt like a mint. I fixed myself then we headed back to the others. I couldn't walk properly. Melisizwe

helped me by holding my hand. Everyone looked at us squinting their eyes while others wanted to laugh. I chuckled looking at the floor.

Cassie: I see you're a loud moaner

Me: was I that loud?

Cassie: very loud my love we even had to open the volume for your daughter

Me: Melisizwe

He smiled looking at me. The party began and everyone was enjoying themselves.

Melisizwe gave me the velvet box. I looked at him squinting my eyes. I opened the box and it was the ring.

Sizwe: remember the promise you made when Sinesipho was two weeks old?

Me: you said that I should promise you when I... OMG it's today. Wow

Sizwe: what did I say?

Tears streamed down my face.

Me: you said that I should promise you when I graduate I should wear this ring

Melisizwe went on his one knee. He held my hand. I smiled looking at him.

Sizwe: I'm happy you remembered what I said to you. Again will you please marry me?

I nodded vigorously looking at him. He slid the ring on my finger. Everyone cheered as we shared a passionate kiss. We were disturbed by my daughter calling us.

Sinesipho: awsemhle mama

- You're so beautiful mom

Me: thank you baby. You also look gorgeous

Sinesipho: thank you, Daddy?

Sizwe: baby

Sinesipho: thank you for this

She said that pointing my ring. Melisizwe gave her a forehead kiss. We shared a tight hug and we were joined by the others. This was so amazing. I actually love this so very much.

- 
- 
- 

**EIGHT MONTHS LATER**

I was sitting by the patio wearing my white gown written Mrs Skhosana. I was having a coffee. Well my girls are so tired. And I

know when they wake up they will have a massive headache. I don't know how I was able to wake up but I'm glad I did. I tried waking everyone up but they told me to fuck off. So I told my mom. And she will be here in no time. She won't even beg everyone. I saw my brother talking with some girl who work at the hotel we're using. My brother had came back from a jog. And he's not wearing any vest. The girl is somehow tempted by my brother's abs. I shook my head as they headed to the room. I knew something was about to go down between the two of them. Busisiwe and Cassie weren't in the same room with us. I wonder what happened between the two of them. My mom barged in my room. She looked at me smiling.

Mom: hey baby and I'm so sorry

She hit the pot she had onto her. I laughed looking at the girls as they tried covering their ears only for my mom to come closer to them. Everyone sat up straight and looked at my mom.

Palesa: really Siphosethu's mother?

Mom: my daughter is getting married you seem to forget

Everyone quickly got out of my room after realising that.

Mom: you have taken a bath right?

Me: yes I just need to see my husband

Mom: you know that I love you right?

I nodded looking at her. She kissed my forehead then she walked out. I cleaned up the room then I got done after some time. I



opened my phone. I smiled seeing my lock screen wallpaper. It was me, my husband and my daughter wearing matching attires. It was the picture from our traditional wedding. Now we're doing the white wedding. I was okay with the traditional wedding only but my husband insisted that we do the white wedding also. And he paid so much money. He did mention that he will give me the wedding that I want and deserve. I sure have scored myself a perfect guy here. I mean he's my best friend, my lover, the father to our beautiful daughter and a loving husband. My makeup artist got in my room. She started attending me. She did my makeup and my hair. I looked so beautiful. I was helped to wear my wedding dressing. The dress looked so amazing on

me. I looked at myself in the mirror. I looked so beautiful. My bridesmaids got in my room. They smiled looking at me. Siyavuya got in my room. He smiled looking at me. Tears streamed down his face. Even though my biological father couldn't come I'm very appreciative when it comes to Silindokuhle's father. He's just an amazing person. I'm really grateful my mom met him and got married to him. Siyavuya kissed my forehead. I smiled looking at him.

Me: where's my daughter?

Cassie: she wanted to be with daddy. She wanted to be the bride today

Me: I see she's trying to take my spot

Busi: you're already married to Melisizwe so please give the baby a chance

Me: Melisizwe is only mine

Bonolo: I knew it

Me: ohh please you know what happened

Bonolo: I know

Me: where's Silindokuhle? Ohh wait I remember

Busi: I wonder what is it. Your brother is already with the others

Mom: okay guys get going. I will follow you guys shortly

They all nodded walking out. Mom held my hand and Siyavuya's hand.

Mom: you know that I love you both right?

We nodded looking at her.

Mom: please don't cry. I don't want you to mess up your make up because of me. Look

baby I'm so proud of you. I have never been this proud of you. I had it in me when I first saw Melisizwe that you guys were going to be together. Just that you were undeniable but look how things have turned out for you. I love this for you. One wouldn't say that you went through a lot when you were young but look now you're one strong woman I ever laid my eyes on when I held you for the first time. Once you're getting in this relationship with Melisizwe there's no turning back. I don't want anyone else but him as my son-in-law. But baby if you feel like you're tired and you can't do this anymore you can come back home. You'll walk out with my husband and please again stopping addressing him with his name. He's now your father since your biological

father failed so miserable. I love you baby never doubt that. I also love you baby just so you know. I will see you two when you head out

My mom kissed my forehead then gave Siyavuya a peck. She walked out after doing that. I looked at Siyavuya who's my father. He smiled looking at me. We walked out of the room then we headed at where the matrimonial service will be held. As soon as I appeared I was met up with my husband looking at me. He smiled looking at me. Tears streamed down our eyes. He bent his head looking at me crying. Everyone chuckled also wiping their tears. I bit my lower lip looking at my husband. He couldn't stand up and look at me. I never thought he was actually going to be this

way. Manqoba helped him up as we reached him. My mom took my boutique flowers. I held one of Melisizwe's hand. My dad spoke something with him then laughs were shared. I smiled wiping his tears. He took the veil out. He looked at me smiling.

Me: you will mess up my make up

Sizwe: they will do it again. I prefer you without makeup. You're so beautiful though

Everyone laughed.

Sizwe: is this really my Siphosethu?

I giggled looking at him. Everyone laughed.

Pastor: can we begin

Sizwe: let's do this

Me: let's do this

We smiled looking at each other. My daughter ran up to us. We hugged her then they took her away from us. Our wedding started. I smiled looking at MY BEST FRIEND who turned out to be MY LOVER then he became A FATHER to our beautiful baby girl and now he's MY HUSBAND. Honestly speaking HIS SCENT MADE ME LOVE HIM just like how my mom told me about how she met Siyavuya. I also fell in love with Melisizwe Skhosana that way. As we're about to begin our lives together. This is just the beginning of our PERFECT LIFE together with our beautiful daughter.

THE END!

Thank you so much for reading my story. It sure had been a bumpy ride but we came to the end of the story. I'll see you guys on my next book which is Season 2 of this story.

Te quiero tanto guys. 😊